

UC-NRLF



\$B 256 631

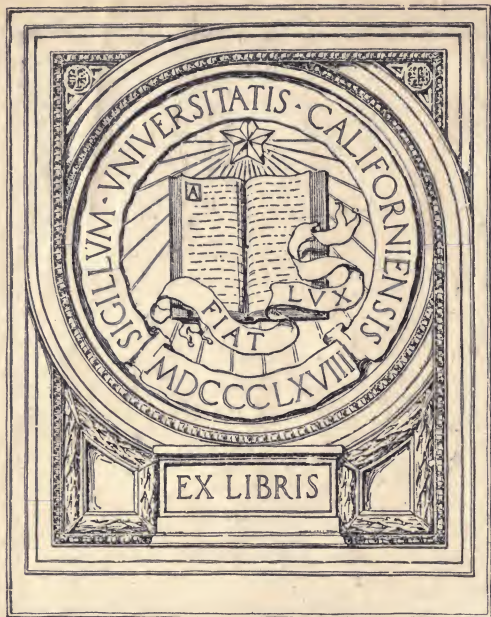
A
SKELETON
SPANISH
GRAMMAR

E. Allison Peers



BLACKIE & SON LIMITED

ELIJAH CLARENCE HILLS • 1867-1932



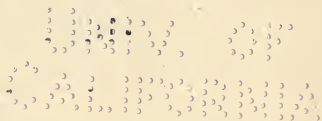
786
P375
a

ELIJAH CLARENCE HILLS was, from 1922 till his death, first a Professor of Spanish and then Professor of Romance Philology at the University of California. A native of Illinois, reared in Florida, he graduated from Cornell in 1892 and studied in Paris; he was successively professor in Rollins College, in Colorado College, librarian of the Hispanic Society of America, and head for romance languages at Indiana University. For his distinguished achievements in Spanish philology, he was made Knight Commander of the Royal Order of Queen Isabel.

In Professor Hills were combined vast and precise learning with extraordinary humanity. Though a grammarian and philologist, his teaching implied the great world. He had a talent for friendship: capable of the seclusions of the scholar and editor and born to an inviolable personal dignity, he possessed also an uncommon social charm which exercised itself in widening circles. His charity showed as kindness, deference, tolerance, the sharing of the possessions his long labors had accumulated. He was a wise collector of books, and specialized in Spanish lexicons. Mrs. Hills presented to the University of California his collection of books, one of which is here inscribed to his memory.



A SKELETON SPANISH GRAMMAR



BY

E. ALLISON PEERS

M.A.(Camb. and Lond.)

Gilmour Professor of Spanish in the University of Liverpool

SECOND EDITION

BLACKIE & SON LIMITED

LONDON AND GLASGOW

BLACKIE & SON LIMITED
50 Old Bailey, London
17 Stanhope Street, Glasgow

BLACKIE & SON (INDIA) LIMITED
Warwick House, Fort Street, Bombay

BLACKIE & SON (CANADA) LIMITED
1118 Bay Street, Toronto

TO THE
ASSOCIATION

E. R. M.

1917

HILLS

PRESERVATION
COPY ADDED
MF219

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION

The *Skeleton Spanish Grammar*, first published in 1917, was intended for students and teachers who realized the necessity of a sound knowledge of grammar, and wished to have the irreducible minimum in clear and convenient form before them. Its success has enabled me to bring out a new and enlarged edition, which, in plan and general arrangement, follows its original. Condensation of matter, elasticity of treatment, and, above all, accuracy and clearness, have been kept in view throughout.

The principal departure in this edition has been the inclusion of an introductory section on the sounds of the Spanish language, together with a sound chart and a number of exercises in phonetic transcription, the notation used being that of the International Phonetic Association as adapted in my *Phonetic Spanish Reader*. The paucity of material at present available for those who wish to have an accurate and scientific knowledge of the pronunciation of Spanish leads me to hope that these new sections will be found of utility; I have been greatly helped in preparing them by Professor Daniel Jones, who has kindly read the most important parts in manuscript and made many suggestions.

The general arrangement of the Grammar, which makes it a useful manual of reference as well as a class-book, has not been altered. For use in class, the teacher may, of course, take the various sections in whatever order he pleases, but it has been found generally convenient to follow the scheme set out on

pages vii-ix. This maps out the work so that the whole ground may be thoroughly covered either in one year or in two.

The series of exercises which follows the grammatical lessons is based upon this scheme of work, but, as the precise subject of every exercise can be seen from a glance at the scheme, this part of the book can perfectly well be used by those who follow a system of their own. Direct method teachers will, it is hoped, find the conversation passages in the early exercises suggestive as well as of intrinsic value. In response to many requests, some further fables have been added to those already given as reading selections; the simplicity and familiarity of their plots, it seems, makes them especially popular, and indeed those of Samaniego are as well suited to the class as to the private student.

It only remains for me to thank the numerous correspondents who, in response to the invitation given when the book first appeared, have sent me criticisms and suggestions, some trivial, some important, but all welcome. Those which space has prevented me from adopting here have been kept with a view to inclusion in a possible second and larger grammar, and I shall therefore always be grateful for further help of a similar kind.

E. A. P.

A Key to the English-Spanish Exercises of "A Skeleton Spanish Grammar" has been issued for the use of teachers.

CONTENTS

SECTION		Page
	INTRODUCTORY: The Sounds of the Spanish Language -	xi
I.	THE ALPHABET - - - - -	1
II.	PRONUNCIATION - - - - -	2
III.	TONIC ACCENT - - - - -	3
IV.	ARTICLES - - - - -	4
V.	USE AND OMISSION OF THE ARTICLE - - - - -	5
VI.	NOUNS - - - - -	7
VII.	PERSONAL <i>a</i> - - - - -	8
VIII.	ADJECTIVES (i) - - - - -	10
IX.	ADJECTIVES (ii) - - - - -	12
X.	ADVERBS - - - - -	14
XI.	COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES - - - - -	15
XII.	COMPARISON OF ADVERBS - - - - -	17
XIII.	INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS - - - - -	18
XIV.	NEGATION - - - - -	18
XV.	PERSONAL PRONOUNS (i) - - - - -	19
XVI.	PERSONAL PRONOUNS (ii) - - - - -	20
XVII.	PERSONAL PRONOUNS (iii) - - - - -	21
XVIII.	POSSESSIVE AND DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS - - - - -	23
XIX.	RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS - - - - -	24
XX.	REFLEXIVE VERBS AND PRONOUNS - - - - -	26
XXI.	NUMERALS - - - - -	28
XXII.	TIME - - - - -	29
XXIII.	WEATHER - - - - -	30
XXIV.	DATES AND AGES - - - - -	30
XXV.	GENERAL REMARKS ON VERBS - - - - -	32
XXVI.	FORMATION OF CERTAIN TENSES (i) - - - - -	33
XXVII.	FORMATION OF CERTAIN TENSES (ii) - - - - -	35

SECTION	Page
XXVIII. <i>TENER</i> AND <i>HABER</i>	36
XXIX. <i>ESTAR</i> AND <i>SER</i>	37
XXX. <i>TENER</i> , TO HAVE	39
XXXI. <i>HABER</i> , TO HAVE	40
XXXII. <i>ESTAR</i> , TO BE	41
XXXIII. <i>SER</i> , TO BE	42
XXXIV. FIRST CONJUGATION <i>-AR</i>	43
XXXV. SECOND CONJUGATION <i>-ER</i>	44
XXXVI. IRREGULARITIES OF ROOT-VOWEL	45
XXXVII. IRREGULARITIES OF CONSONANT	47
XXXVIII. CONTRACTED VERBS	48
XXXIX. THE INFINITIVE	49
XL. PARTICIPLES	50
XLI. USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE (i)	52
XLII. USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE (ii)	54
XLIII. CONDITIONAL SENTENCES	55
XLIV. PREPOSITIONS	56
XLV. CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS	58
XLVI. WORD ORDER	59
XLVII. SUFFIXES	60
XLVIII. USE OF PAST TENSES	62
XLIX. IRREGULAR VERBS	64

APPENDIX

I. EXCEPTIONS TO GENDER RULES	70
II. EXAMPLES OF VERBS WITH IRREGULARITIES IN ROOT-VOWEL	72
III. FORMS OF ADDRESS	76
EXERCISES	79
PHONETIC TRANSCRIPTION OF LESSONS I-III, IX-XI	147
VOCABULARY	153

A SCHEME OF LESSONS

This scheme has been drawn up for the convenience of teachers who wish to use the book as a "Course". It has stood the test of experience, but could no doubt be varied by individuals with even greater success, and is therefore offered with all diffidence. If the book is to be used as a two-year course, the (a) and (b) sections may each occupy a whole lesson. It will probably be found that eight lessons, exclusive of the constant recapitulation which is essential for sound grammatical knowledge, furnish sufficient work for an ordinary term.

[Preliminary—Study Introductory Chapter and read Sections i–iii]

Lesson	Subject.	Sections in Grammar.
1. (a)	Nouns, Articles - - - - -	vi, iv (1–3).
	(b) Subject-pronouns. Adjective, gender and number - - - - -	} xv, viii (1–2).
2. (a)	<i>Tener</i> and <i>Haber</i> —present indicative, and uses of - - - - -	} xxviii, xxx, and xxxi (parts).
	(b) Possessive adjectives and pronouns, -AR verbs, present indicative and participles - - - - -	} ix, 1; xviii, 1; xxxiv (part).
3. (a)	<i>Estar</i> and <i>Ser</i> —present indicative, and uses of - - - - -	} xxxii and xxxiii (parts); xxix.
	(b) Comparison of adjectives, demonstra- tive adjectives and pronouns - - -	} xi; ix, 2; xviii, 2.
4. (a)	Interrogative adjectives and pronouns, -ER verbs, present indicative and participles - - - - -	} xix, 2; xxxv (part).
	(b) Personal <i>a</i> - - - - -	vii.
5. (a)	Conjunctive object-pronouns, reflexive pronouns - - - - -	} xvi, 1; xvii; xx, 1.
	(b) Read sections xxv, xxvi. ¹ Learn section xxvii.	
6. (a)	Future, conditional, and imperative of verbs in sections - - - - -	} xxx–xxxv (parts).
	Numerals - - - - -	xxi.
	(b) Adjectives—finish. Dates, ages -	viii, 3–4; ix, 3; xxiv.

¹ The various parts of this section should be learnt as each tense dealt with in it is studied.

Lesson	Subject.	Sections in Grammar.
7. (a)	Adverbs and their comparison - -	x; xii.
(b)	Disjunctive pronouns; indefinite adjectives and pronouns - - - -	xiii; xvi, 2.
8. (a)	Preterite and imperfect indicative of verbs in sections - - - -	xxx-xxxv (parts).
(b)	Use of past tenses - - - -	xlviii.
9. (a)	Recapitulation of lessons 1-8, especially of the verb and pronoun.	
(b)		
10. (a)	Relative pronouns - - - -	xix, 1.
(b)	"Lo"—Use and omission of the article	iv, 4; v.
11. (a)	Present subjunctive of verbs in sections	xxx-xxxv.
(b)	Time - - - - -	xxii.
12. (a)	Root-changing verbs—Class i - -	xxxvi, 1
(b)	Negation: negative pronouns and adverbs - - - - -	xiv.
13. (a)	Root-changing verbs—Class ii - -	xxxvi, 2
(b)	Passive voice—certain reflexive verbs -	xx, 2-3.
14. (a)	Root-changing verbs—Class iii - -	xxxvi, 3
(b)	Weather - - - - -	xxiii.
15. (a)	Recapitulation of root-changing verbs.	
(b)	Participles - - - - -	xl.
16. (a)	Verbs irregular in consonant - -	xxxvii.
(b)	Prepositions - - - - -	xliv, 1-3.
17. (a)	Recapitulation of lessons 10-16, especially of verbs.	
(b)		
18. (a)	Subjunctive tenses—other than present—of verbs in sections - - - -	xxx-xxxv (parts).
(b)	Conditional sentences - - - - -	xlili.
19. (a)	Irregular verbs: <i>dar, decir, ir, saber</i> -	xliv.
(b)	Use of subjunctive - - - - -	xli.
20. (a)	Irregular verbs: <i>hacer, ver, andar</i> -	xliv.
(b)	Use of subjunctive (continued) - -	xlii, 3.
21. (a)	Irregular verbs: <i>poder, roer, soler</i> -	xliv.
(b)	Use of subjunctive (continued) - -	xlii, 4.

Lesson	Subject.	Sections in Grammar.
22. (a)	Irregular verbs: <i>poner, valer (salir),</i> <i>venir</i> - - - - -	} xlix.
(b)	The infinitive - - - - -	xxxix.
23. (a)	Irregular verbs: <i>querer, concernir,</i> <i>caber</i> - - - - -	} xlix.
(b)	Prepositions (continued) - - -	xliv, 4-5.
24. (a)	Irregular verbs: <i>asir, conducir, yacer</i>	xlix.
(b)	Conjunctions - - - - -	xlv.
25. (a)	Irregular verbs: <i>oir, placer</i> - -	xlix.
(b)	Word order - - - - -	xlvi.
26. (a)	Contracted verbs - - - - -	xxxviii.
(b)	Suffixes - - - - -	xlvii.
27. (a)	Recapitulation of lessons 18-26, es-	
(b)	pecially of irregular verbs.	

INTRODUCTORY

The Sounds of the Spanish Language

1. For those who wish to acquire a pronunciation of Spanish which is more than approximately correct, a precise understanding of the formation of Spanish speech-sounds is essential. Such students should master this Introductory section instead of reading Section II, and, as space does not here permit more than a brief exposition of the distinctive sounds of the Spanish language, they should, if necessary, consult a manual of phonetics for an explanation of the technical terms employed in the following pages, and for a description of the mechanism of speech, an understanding of which they imply.

2. VOWELS.—The differences between Spanish and English vowels are very marked. To begin with, the English vowel is in reality frequently a diphthong (e.g. the “i” of “fine” is a combination of the vowels heard in “ah” and “he”), whereas the Spanish vowel is always a pure or simple sound. Next, the Spanish vowel is tenser than the English—i.e. the part of the mouth which produces the sound is kept more firmly in position. Lastly, the Spanish vowel is normally short.

The chart on the following page gives the five normal Spanish vowel-sounds arranged in such a way as to show the approximate position of the tongue. They may be described as follows, the English and French words in brackets containing approximate equivalents only:—

[i] (Eng. *be*).—Tip of tongue against lower teeth; front

TABLE OF SPANISH SPEECH-SOUNDS

	Lips (Bi-labial).	Lip-Teeth (Labio-dental).	Point (Dental).	Point and Blade (Alveolar).	Blade (Palato- alveolar).	Front of Tongue (Palatal).	Back of Tongue (Velar).	Uvula (Uvular).	
CONSONANTS.	Plosive	... p b	t d	...	...	...	k g	...
	Affricate	...	...	...	çʃ	...	...	...
	Nasal ...	m (ŋ)	...	n	...	...	ɲ	...
	Lateral	...	...	l	...	...	ʎ	...
	Rolled	...	...	r	...	...	...	...
	Flapped	...	...	ɾ	...	...	...	...
	Fricative	v	f	θ ð	s (z)	...	j	x	
	Semi-vowel	...	...	...	...	...	ɣ	...
	VOWELS.	Tongue highest	i	u	
		Tongue lowest	e	o	a

Bracketed symbols represent sounds occurring only through assimilation.

of tongue raised towards the hard palate, leaving a relatively narrow opening; lips spread.

[e] (Eng. *ten*).—Tip of tongue against lower teeth; front of tongue lower than for [i]; opening between front of tongue and hard palate and that between the lips both wider than for [i].

[a] (Fr. *patte*).—A sound intermediate between the vowels of “man” and “calm”; both openings [see above] still wider than for [e].

[o] (Fr. *chose*).—Back of tongue raised towards soft palate; lips pushed slightly forward and rounded.

[u] (Fr. *sou*, Eng. *you*).—Lips still farther forward and more rounded, the opening between them being relatively small; tongue raised higher towards soft palate than for [o].

These are the normal values of the five vowels. Each has also a number of varieties which it is beyond the province of this simple sketch to describe. Speaking generally, it may be said that each vowel is slightly more open in a close syllable, and closer in an open syllable.¹ Thus the *i* of *silba* [silva] is more open than the *i* of *silla* [siɫa]; the *e* of *cocer* [koθeɾ] than that of *queso* [keso]; the *o* of *sordo* [soɾðo] than that of *noche* [nocʃe].

3. CONSONANTS.—The consonants *p*, *m*, *f*, *n*, *g*, *k* (= Spanish *c* before *l*, *r*, *a*, *o*), *ç* (= English and written Spanish *ch*), *ɲ* (= English *ng*; written in Spanish as *n* before [k], [g], [x]), are pronounced approximately as in English, though generally with less force. Only consonants requiring the student's special attention are dealt with below.

Bilabials: *b*, *v*.—The distinction between *b* and *v* in

¹ An *open* syllable in Spanish is one which ends in a vowel (e.g. both syllables of *to-do*); a *close* syllable is one followed by two consonants, or, if final, by one consonant (e.g. both syllables of *con-tar*). It must not be forgotten that *ll* [ʎ] is a single sound and that *ch* [ç] is considered as one also.

written Spanish is purely one of orthography, and the pronunciation would not be affected if the one were substituted for the other.

b or *v* is pronounced as a plosive [b] when it occurs (i) as the initial of a word-group after a pause (e.g. Buenos días [büenoz ðías]); (ii) within a word-group, following a nasal (e.g. un buen día [um büen día]). Otherwise *b* or *v* is a fricative sound [v], produced with less tension than [b] and with the lips slightly open.

w is the sound of *u*, *hu* as the initial of a word or group; before any vowel *u* tends to approximate to it.

Interdentals: *θ*.—This sound, more energetic than English *th*, and with the tongue slightly farther forward, is the sound of *z*, and of *c* before *e* and *i*.

ð represents the *d* of written Spanish in all positions except those indicated under "Dentals" [d] below. It is *not* the sound of *th* in English *thee*, but is less interdental and less tense, being pronounced by the point of the tongue touching the upper teeth very lightly, the air being allowed to pass between and the contact of tongue and teeth being of very short duration. In careless and popular speech [ð] tends in certain combinations to disappear, especially in final positions (e.g. *usted*, *Madrid*) and in the termination *-ado*.

Dentals: *t*.—Spanish *t* is pronounced without the aspiration common in English, and with the point of the tongue much more advanced—generally touching the bottom of the upper teeth.

d represents the *d* of written Spanish (i) as the initial of a word-group after a pause (e.g. *Démelo* [démelo]); (ii) within a word-group, following a nasal or *l* (e.g. *Un día*; *el día* [un día; el día]). Otherwise, as explained above, the fricative [ð] is used.

Alveolars.—*l* represents Spanish *l*, and is pronounced with the tip of the tongue touching the teeth-ridge, while the front of the tongue is raised towards the hard palate, as for the sound of *l* in the English word *left*. The Spanish

sound is not velarized ("dark"), i.e. there is no simultaneous raising of the back of the tongue as in English when it occurs finally (e.g. in *full*) and before consonants (e.g. in *self*).

ɹ (a single flap of the tongue) represents Spanish *r* except when it occurs after a nasal or as the initial of a word. In these positions *r* is pronounced like *rr*, i.e. with much more tension and with several vibrations of the tongue [r]. The "uvular *r*" is never used in Spanish.

s is not unlike English *s*; the point of the tongue, however, is higher, and this gives to Spanish *s* a more palatal sound, almost suggesting French *ch* [ʃ].

z, the voiced variety of [s], represents written *s* before a voiced consonant (such as *v*, *ð*, *m*, *n*, *l*, *g*, *w*). Note that *s* in the intervocalic position is pronounced as [s], not as [z].

Palatals.—ɲ and ʎ represent respectively written *ñ* and *ll*. They are pronounced with the point of the tongue pressed against the lower teeth, and the front against the hard palate—not, as in [nj], [lj] (English, *onion*, *million*), with the *point* of the tongue against the teeth-ridge.

j is the sound of Spanish *y* and initial *hi*. Pronounced with emphasis it often seems to the foreigner not unlike [ʒ] as in French *je*.

Velar.—g is a fricative which represents Spanish *g* in all positions except (i) as the initial of a word-group after a pause; (ii) within a word-group, following a nasal. In these two positions we have a plosive *g* [g].

Uvular.—x, a sound similar to the *ch* of German *ach*, Scots *loch*, is thought by some to be velar, by others uvular. It stands for Spanish *j*, and for *g* before *e* and *i*. The English tendency to substitute the aspirate *h* for it should be overcome from the beginning.

[*Note.*—Words and phrases forming exercises in the pronunciation of the sounds described above, and a phonetic transcription of the reading selections in Lessons I–III, IX–XI, are given on pp. 144–152, where some notes on the reading of connected Spanish will also be found.]

4. The following common deviations may be noted:—

[p] is weak before *t*; e.g. in *septiembre*, *séptimo*, it is scarcely heard.

[m] is the regular pronunciation of *n* before *p*, *b*, e.g. *tranvía* [tɾambía].

[m], [n], are pronounced as labio-dentals before *f* and are then written [ɱ], e.g. *enfermo* [emfɛɾmo]. In the group [nm] (e.g. “con mucho gusto”) the [n] is scarcely audible.

[θ] in South America and the south of Spain is pronounced [s]; in parts of Northern Spain it is substituted for final [ð], e.g. in *usted*.

[kθ], [gθ] represent *cc* according as the pronunciation is emphatic or weak respectively.

[ks] is used for *x* when this is followed by a consonant; [gs] is generally heard when a vowel follows: [ekstɾaño] for *extraño*; [égsito] for *éxito*. In rapid conversation and popular speech both tend to simplify to [s].

I. The Alphabet

1. The Spanish alphabet consists of twenty-nine letters, which are given below, together with the name of each in phonetic script:

A [a]	H [ac̄e]	N [ene]	S [ese]
B [be]	I [i]	Ñ [eje]	T [te]
C [θe]	J [xota]	O [o]	U [u]
CH [c̄e]	K [ka]	P [pe]	V [be]
D [de]	L [ele]	Q [ku]	X [ekis]
E [e]	LL [e.ʎe]	R (r sencilla) [e.ɾe]	Y [i ḡ.ɾega]
F [efe]	M [eme]	RR (r doble) [ere]	Z [θeta]
G [xe]			

W [doble ve] is also found, but only in proper names and other words of foreign origin.

The vowel sounds are *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*; and *y* at the end of words only. *a*, *e*, *o* are called strong vowels; *i*, *u*, *y* are weak vowels.

A *Diphthong* consists of a strong vowel combined with a weak vowel, or of a combination of two weak vowels. The stress in the former case falls upon the strong vowel, in the latter case upon the second of the weak vowels:

e.g. Ái, áu, ói, ió, uí.

If the syllable containing the diphthong is itself unstressed, it is not possible to detect any difference between the stresses of the respective vowels.

2. The only *Written accent* in Spanish is the acute (´). This is used:

(i) To distinguish words of different meaning, but otherwise identical in form:

e.g. **Quien**, who; ¿**Quién?** who?

Mi, my; **mí**, me.

Se, himself; **sé**, I know.

Hacía, he did; **hacia**, towards.

(ii) To indicate the tonic accent when it is not in accordance with the rule given in Section III.

The vowels *a, e, o, u* do not now bear the accent when they stand alone as separate words. This suppression has recently been made by the Spanish Academy.

3. CAPITAL LETTERS are not required for the pronoun *yo* (I), for names of days or months, nor for proper adjectives, except at the beginning of a sentence or of a line of verse:

e.g. *viernes*, Friday; *hablamos francés*, we speak French.

4. PUNCTUATION.—Notice that question marks and exclamation marks are used at each end of the sentence to which they refer, and at the beginning of the sentence are inverted:

e.g. ¡Cuidado! Take care; ¿Por qué no? Why not?

II. Pronunciation

1. For those who are unable to master the Introductory section, p. xi, the following approximate rules should be of service. The pupil should not fail to pronounce carefully the words and phrases given in ordinary script on p. 144, as well as in phonetic script on p. 145, until he is quite familiar with the sounds they illustrate.

2. CONSONANTS are pronounced approximately as in English with the following exceptions:

b, v are purely distinctions of spelling. After a pause and after nasals they are pronounced like English *b*; in other positions they are represented by a sound midway between *b* and *v*. (See p. xiii.)

c is (i) like *k* before *a, o, u* or before a consonant; (ii) like *th* (in English "thin") before *e, i*.

[*cc* before *e* and *i* is pronounced like *k* (sometimes *g*) + *th*.]

s is like *th* (in English "thin") *always*.

ll, like *lli* of "million"; *ñ*, like *ni* of "onion".

d is represented by English *d* after *n* or *l* and after a pause. Otherwise its pronunciation bears a faint resemblance to English *th*. (See p. xiv.) At the end of a word and in the termination *-ado* it is so lightly pronounced as to be almost silent, as indeed it frequently is in rapid conversation.

g is (i) like *g* (of English "go") after a pause and after a nasal; (ii) like a softer, "breathed" *g* (see p. xv) in other positions, except before *e*, *i*; (iii) like the *ch* of Scots "loch" before *e*, *i*.

j is pronounced like *ch* in "loch" *always*.

qu = English *k*; *gu* before *e*, *i* follows the rules for *g* (i or ii above).

r is always pronounced with the tip of the tongue; *rr*, and *r* after a pause or after a nasal, is very strongly trilled.

s is always pronounced hard (as in "case", not as in "rose") when it occurs between two vowels.

Note when using a dictionary that *ch*, *ll*, *ñ* are *separate letters*.

3. VOWELS.—The vowels are pronounced approximately as in French (except that Spanish "u" corresponds to French "ou"), but they are generally shorter. All are *pure* vowels, and the lips are kept in a taut position while pronouncing them. While never so "close" as (for example) the vowels of the French words *âne*, *beau*, they are closer in syllables where no consonant follows the vowel than otherwise. (See p. xi.)

Remember particularly to pronounce all vowels short, and to avoid diphthonguizing vowels, as in English.

III. Tonic Accent

1. The Tonic accent is less strongly marked than in English. It falls on *the last syllable but one* (penultimate) of words ending in a *vowel*, or in *-n* or *-s*; and on the *last syllable* of words ending in a consonant other than *-n* or *-s*:

e.g. (i) La hora , the hour.	Los niños , the children.
El hijo , the son.	Viven , they live.
Vive , he lives.	

(ii) **Hablar**, to speak; **verdad**, truth; **vivir**, to live.

2. If a word is to be accented on any other syllable than the normal one in accordance with this rule, the syllable to be accented must bear an *acute accent*:

e.g. Hablé, I spoke.	El lápiz, the pencil.
Sentí, I felt.	El ejército, the army.
Estás, thou art.	El ladrón, the thief.

The reason why words ending in *-n* or *-s* are treated like vowels is that *-n* is often merely a sign of the inflexion of a verb, and *-s* of the plural of a noun. Thus if *-n* and *-s* were treated as consonants, a word would frequently be accented differently in singular and plural, which under the present rule is very rarely the case.

Notice that some nouns have the acute accent in the singular, but not in the plural, and *vice versa*:

e.g. El Francés, the Frenchman; los Franceses.
El crimen, the crime; los crímenes.

IV. Articles

1. INDEFINITE ARTICLE:

	Sing.	Plur.	
Masc.	Un.	Unos.	e.g. Un señor, unos señores.
Fem.	Una.	Unas.	e.g. Una dama, unas damas.

Note.—(i) Before a noun beginning with stressed “*a*” or “*ha*”, *un* is sometimes written for *una*: e.g. *un ala*, a wing.

(ii) “*Unos*”, “*unas*” have the meaning of “*some*”:

e.g. *Tengo unos ejemplares de su libro.* I have some copies of his book.

2. DEFINITE ARTICLE:

	Sing.	Plur.	
Masc.	El.	Los.	e.g. El padre. Los padres.
Fem.	La.	Las.	e.g. La madre. Las madres.

Note.—Before a noun beginning with stressed “*a*” or “*ha*”, *el* is regularly written for *la*: e.g. *el agua*, the water; *but la araña*, the spider.

3. CONTRACTIONS.—The following contractions only are formed in Spanish:

De and *el* are contracted to *del* (of the).

a and *el* are contracted to *al* (to the):

e.g. Del padre, al padre. But de los padres, a las niñas.

4. LO.—This neuter article is employed before adjectives used as nouns:

e.g. Lo bello. Beauty, or “that which is beautiful”.

Lo eterno. The Eternal.

Lo esencial. The essential thing, the essentials.

Notice also the following idiomatic uses of “*lo*”:

Lo peor no es eso. That is not the worst of it.

No sabe Vd.	{	lo bueno que es.
		You don't know how good he is.
		lo bien que habla.
		You don't know how well he speaks.

¡ Lo bonito que es! How pretty it is!

V. Use and Omission of the Article

1. *The Definite Article is used in Spanish but not in English:*

(a) Before abstract nouns, or nouns taken in a generic sense:

e.g. El dinero es útil. Money is useful.

Exception.—When the noun is used partitively:

e.g. No tiene dinero.

He has no money (i.e. He has not *any* money).

¿ Compra Vd. guantes?

Are you buying gloves? (i.e. *some* gloves).

(b) Before the names of countries and continents:

La Inglaterra, England.

Exception.—When the name is governed by *a, de, en,* or *para*:

e.g. He vivido en Italia. I have lived in Italy.
Voy a Francia. I am going to France.

A few such names, however, notably el Canadá, el Japón, el Brasil, la China, always require the article.

(c) Before a title or a qualified proper noun, *except* Don, Doña, and in direct address:

e.g. El Señor X, el general Z.

(d) Before the name of a language, *except* after hablar, which only takes the article with “castellano”:

e.g. Enseño el francés. Habla francés. Habla el castellano.

(e) Instead of a possessive adjective when the thing possessed is considered as part of the possessor (cf. Section XVII, 3):

e.g. Trabaja con las manos. He works with his hands.

(f) Instead of the English indefinite article in expressions of time, weight, measure:

Una peseta la libra, tenpence a pound.

(g) To denote times and seasons (see Section XXV, 1):

En el verano, in summer.

(h) Before an infinitive used as a noun:

e.g. El comer, eating; el saber, knowledge.

2. *The Definite Article is omitted in Spanish:*

(a) Before a noun in apposition:

e.g. Cristóbal Colón, marinero ilustre.
The illustrious seaman, Christopher Columbus.

(b) Before a numeral in titles:

Luis catorce, Louis the Fourteenth.

3. *The Indefinite Article is omitted in Spanish:*

(a) Before otro, cierto, tal, tanto, semejante, and the numerals ciento, mil.

(b) Before nouns in apposition, or denoting profession, nationality, rank:

Soy español. I am a Spaniard.
Es soldado. He is a soldier.

(c) After *qué* in exclamations:

e.g. ¡Qué lástima! What a pity!

VI. Nouns

1. GENDER.—Names of male and female beings are masculine and feminine, as in English.

Names of *mountains, rivers, trees, winds, cardinal points, years, months, and days* are *masculine*.

Names of things are *masculine*, except those ending in *-a, -ión, -d, -z*, which are *feminine*.

[The principal exceptions to these rules will be found in Appendix I.]

To avoid mistakes in gender, always learn article and noun together:

e.g. Not “carne”, but “*la carne*”.

2. NUMBER.—Nouns ending in an *unstressed vowel* add *s* to form their plural:

e.g. El amigo, los amigos.

Nouns ending in a *consonant* or a *stressed vowel* (other than “*e*”) add *es*:

e.g. El rubí, los rubíes. El señor, los señores.
But: El té, los tés.

Exceptions.—(a) Final *-x* or *-z* changes to *-ces* in the plural:

e.g. La voz, las voces.

(b) Nouns in unaccented *-is, -es, -ez* are usually unchanged in the plural:

e.g. La crisis, las crisis.

3. CASE.—The *genitive* (or possessive) of nouns is denoted by the preposition **de**:

- e.g. El hermano de Juan, John's brother.
 La casa del hombre, the man's house.
 Los navíos de los marineros, the mariners' ships.

The *dative* (or case of the indirect object) is denoted by the preposition **a**:

- e.g. Doy el libro a mi hermano. I give my brother the book.
 Doy pan al pobre mendigo. I give bread to the poor beggar.

Another use of *a* is explained in Section VII.

VII. Personal **a**

1. *Rule*.—When the direct object of a verb is a proper noun, or a noun denoting *a definite and particular person* or *personified thing*, *a* is used before the direct object:

- e.g. Busco **a** mi hermano. I am looking for my brother.
 Llama **a** la muerte. He calls upon Death.

The following examples should be carefully studied:

- Amo **a** mis niños. I love my children (definite).
 Amo los niños. I love children, i.e. in general (indefinite).
 He hallado **a** mi amigo en su cuarto.
 I found my friend in his room.
 No he hallado **a** nadie. I found nobody.
 He hallado muchos hombres. I found many men (indefinite).
 Busco compañeros.
 I am looking for companions (indefinite).
 Busco un profesor que enseñe el francés. (See Section XLI, 6.)
 I am looking for a master who teaches French (indefinite).
 He encontrado **a** mi profesor. I met my master (definite).

Note the difference in meaning between the sentences:

- Estaba aguardando un alumno and Estaba aguardando **a** un alumno. Both mean "He was waiting for a pupil". But

while the first suggests that he was waiting for *any* pupil, i.e. waiting in the hope that some pupil might come, the second indicates that he had a definite pupil in his mind, and was waiting for that pupil and for no other.

Often the use of personal *a* is a question of style, and the more advanced student may well note examples like the following, which can be explained by the rule given above, but are not quite so obvious as those already quoted:

Siegfried saludó **al** nuevo día. (Personified thing.)

He visto con los ojos del alma **a** la nueva patria.

Juan Valera: *Pepita Jiménez*. (Personified thing.)

No conocía **a** la mayor parte de aquellos personajes.

Palacio Valdés: *La Espuma*. (Considered as definite person, though really a definite group of persons.)

2. *Rule*.—Personal *a* also occurs before the object, when without it subject and object could not be distinguished:

e.g. Rige el verbo **al** nombre. The verb governs the noun.

3. The chief exceptions to these rules are:

(a) With the verb *tener*, which takes no *a* unless the object is quite explicitly determined. Cf. the following sentences:

Tengo un hermano. I have a brother.

But Ahí tienes **a** tu hermano. Here you have your brother.

(b) When the verb governs an indirect as well as a direct object, *a* is often omitted before the latter. This is mainly a matter of avoiding ambiguity. If none is possible, the second *a* may be used. Thus we find in standard authors phrases like:

Llevaba **a** su madre al teatro.

(Palacio Valdés: *La Espuma*.)

Trayendo **a** sí a los neutrales y vacilantes.

(Juan Valera: *Doña Luz*.)

and even occasionally a construction which only the context saves from ambiguity and which should not be imitated:

Presentó Laura a su hermano a estas damas.

(Pío Baroja: *César o nada*.)

(c) Before a word beginning with "a", the personal *a* is omitted for euphony.

4. Note the following pairs of verbs with different meanings:

Dejar, leave behind.	Buscar, seek.
Dejar a, abandon.	Buscar a, try to procure.
Perder, lose.	Querer, wish.
Perder a, destroy.	Querer a, like, love.

VIII. Adjectives (i)

1. GENDER.—Adjectives ending in -o change -o to -a in the feminine:

e.g. Bueno, buena.

All other adjectives are invariable in the feminine:

e.g. Azul (blue), difícil, inteligente.

But (i) Adjectives denoting *nationality* and *ending in a consonant* add -a to form the feminine:

e.g. Inglés, inglesa; español, española.

(ii) Adjectives (not being comparatives) ending in -n or -or add -a to form the feminine:

e.g. Holgazán, holgazana, lazy.

2. NUMBER.—Adjectives, like nouns, form their plural by adding -s or -es to the singular, or by changing -z into -ces:

e.g. Caro, caros, dear; capaz, capaces, capable.

3. AGREEMENT.—The adjective agrees with its noun in gender and number.

If it qualifies two separate nouns of the same gender, it agrees with them in the plural.

If it qualifies two separate nouns of different genders, it is in the masculine plural.

If, however, the nearest noun is in the feminine plural, the adjective also is allowed to be in the feminine plural.

e.g. **Los profesores y los muchachos españoles.**

The Spanish masters and boys.

Las cucharas y los tenedores están limpios.

The spoons and forks are clean.

Los cuchillos y las cucharas están limpias (or limpios).

The knives and spoons are clean.

4. POSITION.—Adjectives of quality usually *follow* the noun, with the following exceptions:

(a) **Bueno** and **malo**; also **grande** when not referring to size. (See Section IX, 3.)

(b) Adjectives used figuratively, or emphatically, or denoting a quality which is considered an essential part of the noun:

e.g. **La blanca nieve**, the white snow.

Firme constancia, firm (ness and) constancy.

La tarde del siguiente día, the evening of the next day.

Sus frescas y sonrosadas mejillas.

Her fresh, rosy cheeks.

(Juan Valera: *Doña Luz.*)

(c) A few adjectives differ in meaning according to their position:

Un buen hombre, a good fellow.

Un hombre bueno, a good (i.e. worthy) man.

Una cierta cosa, a certain thing.

Una cosa cierta, a sure (true) thing.

Un gran palacio, a fine palace.

Una casa grande, a large house.

Un nuevo libro, a fresh book.

Un libro nuevo, a new book.

Un pobre animal, a poor animal (i.e. unfortunate or worthless).

Ur. hombre pobre, a poor (i.e. needy) man.

NOTE.—The position of the adjective before or after the noun is largely a question of style, and the student cannot begin too early to look for examples of unexpected constructions in his reading.

IX. Adjectives (ii)

1. POSSESSIVE:

Mi, mis, my.	Nuestro (-s, -a, -as), our.
Tu, tus, your.	Vuestro (-s, -a, -as), your.
Su, sus, his, her.	Su, sus, their.

Only the first and second plural forms vary for gender:

e.g. *Mi libro, mi casa; nuestro libro, nuestra casa.*

The possessive adjective is sometimes placed *after the noun* for emphasis. In the singular the following forms are then substituted for those just given:

Mío, my; tuyo, your; suyo, his, her.

These vary for gender as well as for number:

e.g. *Este es amigo mío (amiga mía).* This is a friend of mine.

Polite form. (See Section XV):

SU, SUS, your (singular and plural).

As the different meanings of "su" may cause ambiguity, such phrases as *el libro de él, su libro de él, la casa (or su casa) de ellas* are often employed for *su libro, su casa, etc.*

2. DEMONSTRATIVE:

This	este,	esta;	estos,	estas.
That	ese,	esa;	esos,	esas.
	aquel,	aquella;	aquellos,	aquellas.

Aquel is used of something farther away from the speaker than *ese*. With reference to time, *aquel* stands for a period remoter than *ese*, and *este* for present or recently past time.

3. LOSS OF FINAL LETTERS.—Bueno, malo, alguno, ninguno, primero, and tercero lose their final letters when *immediately* followed by a noun. The feminine forms do not change.

e.g. Un buen maestro, a good master; algún día, some day;
el primer capítulo, the first chapter.

But: Una buena mujer, a good woman.
La primera lección, the first lesson.

Grande becomes gran before a noun, *whether masculine or feminine*:

e.g. Un **gran** rey, a great king; una **gran** mujer, a great woman.

(But, una manzana **grande**, a large apple.)

Santo (Saint) becomes San before the *masculine* name of a saint:

e.g. San Pedro (but este santo).

There are several exceptions, of which the chief are Santo Domingo, Santo Tomás.

Ciento (a hundred) is always written cien unless a numeral adjective follows it (not including mil, millón, etc.):

e.g. Cien días, cien mil soldados; but ciento uno, ciento dos, etc.

The adverb reciente becomes recién when followed immediately by a past participle:

e.g. El general recién venido.
The general who has recently come.

X. Adverbs

1. FORMATION.—Adjectives are sometimes used as adverbs in Spanish without any change of form:

e.g. *Bajo*, low; *barato*, cheap, cheaply; *pronto*, quick, soon.

More commonly, however, adjectives are changed into adverbs by the addition of *-mente* to their feminine singular:

e.g. *Puro*, pure; *puramente*, purely; *fácil*, easy; *fácilmente*, easily.

When two or more adverbs ending in *-mente* occur together in a sentence, the **last only** takes the termination:

e.g. *Habló firme y severamente*. He spoke firmly and severely.

If the adjective is a long one, it is more usual to form a phrase with *con* than to add the termination. For example, *con industria* is preferable to *industriosamente*; *con orgullo* to *orgullosamente*.

2. ADVERBS OF PLACE:

Aquí, acá, here.
Ahí, there.
Allí, allá, there
 (farther away than *ahí*).

Acá and *allá* are used with verbs of motion:

e.g. *Aquí está mi hermano*.
 But: *Venga Vd. acá*.

Note.—*Hé aquí* . . . Here is, here are. (Originally *ve aquí*; cf. Fr. *voici*.) *Héme aquí*. Here I am. (Fr. *me voici*.)

¿*Dónde?*, when expressing motion, is preceded by *a*, *por*, *de*, or another preposition:

e.g. ¿*A dónde va?* ¿*De dónde viene?* etc.

Donde (but *not cuando*) may stand for a relative preceded by *en*:

e.g. *La ciudad donde (= en que) vivimos*.
 The town where (in which) we live.

3. *Mucho* and *muy*, much, very, very much.

Mucho is used with *Nouns* and *Verbs*, and before *antes*, *después*, *más*, *menos*, and *comparatives*.

Muy is used with most *Adverbs*, *Adjectives*, and *Past Participles* used as adjectives:

e.g. Trabajo mucho, I work a great deal.

Su libro fué muy admirado. His book was very much admired.

Mucho más temprano, much earlier.

Muy temprano, very early.

Notice that the English adjective sometimes corresponds to the Spanish noun, and is therefore qualified by *mucho*, not *muy*. Hace mucho calor, mucho viento. It is very warm, very windy.

At the end of a sentence *mucho* is used, even though it may be modifying an adjective:

¿Está Vd. cansado? Sí, mucho.

Are you tired? Yes, very.

It will be seen that *tanto* (Section XI) follows the rule of *mucho*, and *tan* that of *muy*.

XI. Comparison of Adjectives

I. COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES:

The *Comparative* of adjectives is formed by prefixing *más* to the Positive.

The *Superlative* by prefixing *el más* (*la más*, etc.):

e.g. Frío, cold; más frío, colder; el más frío, coldest.

"Less cold" is similarly *menos frío*.

IRREGULAR COMPARISONS:

Grande	mayor	el mayor.	|	Bueno	mejor	el mejor.
Pequeño	menor	el menor.	|	Malo	peor	el peor.
	Alto	superior		el superior.		
	Bajo	inferior		el inferior.		

Grande and pequeño, however, are usually compared with *más*, unless their meaning is "old" and "young".

2. COMPARISONS OF EQUALITY:

Tan . . . como, as . . . as. With *adjectives* and *adverbs*.
Invariable.

Tanto (-a) . . . como, as much . . . as. With *nouns*.
Varies for gender and number.

e.g. Este muchacho no es tan atento como su hermano.
 This boy is not as attentive as his brother.

No tengo tanto dinero como Vd.
 I have not as much money as you.

When the word "como" is followed by a clause, "que" is substituted for it:

e.g. Es tan atento que parece hábil.
 He is so attentive that he appears clever.

Compare with these phrases the expression:

Cuanto . . . tanto, the . . . the . . . (with comparatives).

3. ABSOLUTE SUPERLATIVE.—When the superlative is used "absolutely"—i.e. with no idea of a comparison—it is expressed either by *muy* with the positive, or by the addition of *-ísimo* (*-ísima*, etc.) to the adjectival stem (formed by cutting off the final vowel, if any):

e.g. *Muy hermoso*, or *hermosísimo*, very beautiful.

When the latter change is made, the adjectival stem is sometimes altered.

(1) The root vowels *ie*, *ue* return to their original forms of *e*, *o*:

e.g. *Bueno*, *bonísimo*.

(2) The termination *-ble* changes to *-bil*, *co* to *qu*, *go* to *gu*, *z* to *c*:

e.g. *Noble*, *nobilísimo*; *rico*, *riquísimo*.

Irregular absolute superlatives (formed from Latin stems) are:

celeberrimo (*célebre*); *fidelísimo* (*fiel*); *misérrimo* (*miser*);
sapientísimo (*sabio*).

XII. Comparison of Adverbs

1. **COMPARISON OF ADVERBS.**—Adverbs are compared like adjectives; i.e. by prefixing *más* to the positive. The *el* of the superlative is nearly always omitted:

e.g. *Despacio*, slowly; *más despacio*, more slowly.
Pronto, soon; *más pronto*, sooner.

IRREGULAR COMPARISONS:

<i>Bien</i> , mejor, well.	<i>Mucho</i> , más, much.
<i>Mal</i> , peor, ill, badly.	<i>Poco</i> , menos, few.

2. “*Than*” is usually expressed by *que* after both adjectives and adverbs:

Juan es mayor que Carlos.
Carlos trabaja mejor que Juan.

and by *de* before numerals when no comparison is made:

e.g. *Tengo más de dos mil libros.*
 I have more than two thousand books.

When, however, the comparison is followed by a clause, “*than*” is expressed as:

(*a*) *Del que* (*de la que*, *de los que*, *de las que*) if the comparison is made with a noun in the principal clause:

e.g. *Tengo más dinero del que tenía el año pasado,*
 I have more money than I had last year.

Me prestó más libros de los que pedí,
 He lent me more books than I asked for.

(*b*) *De lo que* (indeclinable) if the comparison is made with a statement or a fact (cf. use of *lo que*, Section XIX):

e.g. *Es más rico de lo que parece.* He is richer than it appears.

3. **ABSOLUTE SUPERLATIVE.**—Many adverbs have absolute superlatives like adjectives:

e.g. *Altísimo*, very high; *bajísimo*, very low.
Tempranísimo, very early.

XIII. Indefinite Adjectives and Pronouns

1. INVARIABLE:

Alguien, anybody; algo, anything. } *Pronouns.*
 Nadie, nobody; nada, nothing.
 Cada, each, every. *Adjective.*

2. VARIABLE (according to the usual rule for adjectives):

Alguno (see Section IX, 3), some, any, a few.
 Ninguno, none, not any.

These are *either adjectives or pronouns*. It should be noticed that "some" is often expressed by **unos**. In partitive expressions (see Section V) no adjective is necessary, either in affirmative or negative sentences:

Mucho, much; poco, a few (cf. un poco de, a little).
 Todo, all, every.

Otro,¹ other, another (cf. uno y ¹otro, both; uno u ¹otro, either; ni uno ni ¹otro, neither; el uno . . . el otro, each other).

Tal,¹ such, such a.

These are *either adjectives or pronouns*.

Mismo, same, very, self. *Adjective.*

Cada uno, cada cual, each (one). *Pronouns.* (Latter half only varies.)

XIV. Negation

1. A verb is made negative by placing the word **no** before it:

e.g. No hablo. I do not speak.

¿No habla Vd.? Do you not speak?

2. The *Negative Pronouns* ninguno, nadie, nada (Section XIII) cause the verb to be made negative if they

¹Note that **otro** needs *no indefinite article* before it, nor **tal** after it. Cf. V, 3a.

follow it, but otherwise they are themselves a sufficient negative:

e.g. *Nadie ha venido*, or *no ha venido nadie*, nobody has come.

3. The *Negative Adverbs* are:

Ni . . . ni, neither . . . nor; *nunca*, never.

Jamás, never (= "ever" with an affirmative verb).

Tampoco, neither.

These follow the same rule as the negative pronouns:

e.g. *No lo he leído nunca*. I have never read it.

Nunca le he visto. I have never seen him.

XV. Personal Pronouns (i)

SUBJECT OF THE VERB:

Yo, I.

Nosotros (-as), we.

Tú, you.

Vosotros (-as), you.

Él, ella, he, she.

Ellos (-as), they.

Except for emphasis, these pronouns are not usually written. Thus:

Trabajamos, we work; *trabajan*, they work.

Yo trabajo, pero él toca el piano.

I work, but he plays the piano.

[*Yo*, like French "je", is never written with a capital letter except at the beginning of a sentence.]

Usted.—In ordinary intercourse neither *tú* nor *vosotros* is used for "you", but the pronoun *Usted* (plural *Ustedes*), often known as the "Polite form" of address. This pronoun is an abbreviation of the old courteous phrase *Vuestra merced* (your honour). It is abbreviated *Vd.* or *V.* (plural *Vds.* or *VV.*), and the verb which follows it is in the *Third Person*.

As this pronoun is invariably the form of address which the foreigner hears and uses in Spain, the student should

practise it continually, and *employ no other pronoun* to translate "you" unless he has express directions to the contrary. Thus "How are you?" is translated ¿Cómo está Vd.? (or ¿Cómo están Vds?), *not* ¿Cómo estás? or ¿Cómo estáis?

For the sake of clearness, Vd. is often expressed where other pronouns would be omitted. It is always written with the imperative.

Tú is only used in prayers, and in addressing children, members of one's family, and animals. Vosotros is used in speaking to two or more persons who would be addressed separately as tú; it is also employed in speeches and sermons, and in books where the reader is apostrophised.

XVI. Personal Pronouns (ii)

1. OBJECT OF THE VERB (CONJUNCTIVE):

SINGULAR

Direct Object.	Indirect Object.
me, me.	me, to me.
te, you.	te, to you.
le, lo, him, it, you (masc.).	le, { to him, to her,
la, her, it, you (fem.).	{ to it, to you.

PLURAL

nos, us.	nos, to us.
os, you.	os, to you.
los } them, you (plur.)	les, to them, to you
las }	(plur.).

Remember that in ordinary address the forms le, lo, la, los, las, les are substituted for te and os.

2. OBJECT OF PREPOSITIONS (DISJUNCTIVE).—

These pronouns are *identical in form with the Subject Pronouns*, with the exception of mí, me, and ti, you (second person singular). Sí is used for *himself, herself, themselves, yourself, and yourselves* (i.e. reflexive pronouns),

and often also for the ordinary pronouns of the third person, including Vd.:

e.g. Para mí, for me; para nosotros, for us.
 por él, by him; por sí, by himself (etc.), by him (etc.).
 Sin Vd., without you.

If con (with) governs mí, ti, or sí, three special forms are used:

Conmigo (with me), contigo (with you), and consigo (with him, etc.).

“*It*” is of course usually represented by the masculine or feminine pronoun according as it refers to a masculine or a feminine noun. If, however, it stands for something which can have no gender (e.g. a sentence or an idea), it is expressed by lo when the object of a verb (cf. English “so”), and by ello in other cases:

e.g. ¡Ya lo creo! I should think so!
 Lo creo. I believe it.
 No pienso en ello. I don't think of it.

Lo often corresponds to French “en”:

No lo hay (Il n'y *en* a pas). There isn't any.

XVII. Personal Pronouns (iii)

FURTHER RULES FOR OBJECT PRONOUNS.

1. *Positions of pronoun and verb:*

(i) The object pronoun usually *precedes the verb* which governs it:

e.g. Lo compro. I buy it.
 Lo he comprado. I have bought it.

(ii) The pronoun, when governed by an infinitive, present participle, or imperative affirmative, *follows* the verb, and is joined to it so as to form one word:

e.g. Cómprolo Vd., buy it; Para comprarlo, in order to buy it.
 [But No lo compre Vd., don't buy it.]

(iii) The position of the pronoun before or after the verb is *optional*:

(a) When the sentence begins with the verb (the normal position, however, is here preferable).

(b) When the present participle or the infinitive forms part of a compound tense:

e.g. *Le está escribiendo, or está escribiéndole.*

He is writing to him.

Le quiero escribir, or quiero escribirle.

I want to write to him.

2. *Positions of two pronouns:*

(i) When two pronouns are governed by the same verb, the indirect object precedes the direct:

e.g. *Me lo ha enviado.* He has sent *it to me*.

(ii) When both these pronouns are of the third person, the first is changed to *se*:

e.g. *Se lo leyó.* He read it to him (or them).

[For *Le* (or *les*) *lo leyó.*]

(iii) If this change makes the meaning of the sentence vague, *a él, a ellos, a Vd., etc.*, may be added to the verb:

e.g. *Se lo leyó a él (= Le lo leyó).*

Se lo leyó a ellos (= Les lo leyó).

(iv) *A mí, a él, etc.*, are also added to the verb for emphasis:

e.g. *Lo he prestado a Vd., pero no a ella,*

I have lent it to you, but not to her.

3. A common idiomatic use of the object pronoun is seen in such phrases as:

Me he cortado la mano. I have cut my hand.

Me ha salvado la vida. He has saved my life.

When the subject and indirect object refer to the same person, the pronoun is often omitted. (See Section V, 1, *e.*)

This construction is not limited in any way to phrases in which parts of the body are spoken of. It may be used whenever the direct object is considered as a part of the possessor—of the clothes, hat, etc.

XVIII. Possessive and Demonstrative Pronouns

I. POSSESSIVE:

El **mío**, mine.

El **tuyo**, yours.

El **suyo**, his, hers, its.
yours (polite form).

El **nuestro**, ours.

El **vuestro**, yours.

El **suyo**, theirs (masc. and fem.).
yours (polite form).

All these pronouns vary in both parts for gender and number:

e.g. *Mis libros y los suyos. Sus casas y las nuestras.*

[*Lo mío, lo tuyo* are used in the sense of “what is mine”, etc.:

e.g. *Lo mío y lo tuyo = meum et tuum.*]

After the verb “to be” the *el* is omitted, unless it is meant to add emphasis to the sentence:

e.g. *Esos libros son míos*
= those books are mine (unemphatic).

Esos libros son los míos
= those are the books which belong to me.

(Cf. the use of *mío* for *mi* in Section IX, 1.)

As the various meanings of *suyo* may cause ambiguity, the endings *de él, de ella*, etc., are often substituted for it:

e.g. *Nuestro primo y el de ella (= el suyo).*
Our cousin and hers.

Nuestra hermana y la de él (= la suya).
Our sister and his.

2. DEMONSTRATIVE.—The demonstrative adjectives (accented) **éste, ése, aquél** (IX, 2) serve also as pronouns, together with the neuter forms **esto, eso, and aquello**, which are used to denote sentences, ideas, etc., which can have no gender (cf. French *ceci, cela*):

e.g. **Esto es cierto.** That is certain.
¿Qué es eso? What is that?

Before relative clauses, and when qualified by a phrase beginning with **de**, the demonstrative pronoun is replaced by **el que, el de**, etc., and less often by **aquel que, aquel de** (cf. French *celui*).

Lo que thus corresponds to English “what”, meaning “that which” (cf. French *ce qui, ce que*):

e.g. **Este libro es el que buscaba.**
 This book is the one he was looking for.

Lo que creo es verdad.
 What I believe is true.

El que sabe leer es feliz.
 A man who can read is happy.

At the beginning of a sentence, **quien** may be used for **el que** with the force of French *celui qui*:

e.g. **Quien sabe leer es feliz.** He who can read is happy.

XIX. Relative and Interrogative Pronouns

I. RELATIVE:

<i>Nom.</i>	Persons. Que (el cual; quien).	Things. Que.
<i>Acc.</i>	a quien (quien after prepositions).	Que.
<i>Gen.</i>		Cuyo.

Que is invariable; **quien** and **cuyo** vary like adjectives for gender and number:

e.g. **La casa que he visto.**
The house I have seen.

El señor cuyos libros ha comprado Vd.
The gentleman whose books you have bought.

Instead of **que** (*nominative*) may be used:

(a) **Quien** after the verb "to be" followed by a noun or pronoun. **El hombre que viene.** *But* ¿Son ellos quienes vienen?

(b) **El cual** (variable), less frequently **el que** (**el** alone being variable), when the relative has a *continuative* and not a *restrictive* force.¹

Other uses of **el cual**, **el que** are:

(1) When the antecedent is separated from the relative pronoun by a number of words.

(2) When the relative is governed by a long preposition (e.g. a compound preposition such as **alrededor de**, around; **sin embargo de**, notwithstanding).

(3) When two nouns stand in the antecedent clause, and it is impossible by means of the invariable **que** to show which is meant.

Lo cual and **lo que** refer, not to a word, but to the whole of a preceding clause:

e.g. **He tomado los libros, lo que (or lo cual) el profesor no sabe.**
I have taken the books, which the master does not know.

2. INTERROGATIVE:

¿Quién? Who? ¿Qué? What? ¿Cuál? Which?

¹A relative clause is said to have a *continuative* force when it is *logically* of equal importance with the principal clause, though *grammatically* subordinated to it. In such a clause "and he" or "and she" may be substituted for "who" without any difference being made in the sense:

e.g. I met my friend, who told me all the news. *Continuative.*
I met my friend who lives in Essex. *Restrictive.*

Note the accents on these pronouns:

e.g. ¿Quién es? Who is it? Who is he?
 ¿Qué dice Vd.? What do you say?

Qué (also used as an adjective) is invariable.

Quién (*pronoun only*) and cuál (most commonly a pronoun) vary like adjectives.

Avoid using cuál as an adjective, as in ¿cuáles hombres?

De quién and a quién stand for *Of whom? Whose?* and *To whom?*

¿De quién hablaba Vd.?
 Whom were you speaking of?
 ¿De quién son esas casas?
 Whose houses are those?
 ¿A quién ha dado Vd. sus flores?
 Whom did you give your flowers to?

Note the exclamations:

¡Qué lindo es! How pretty it is! (Cf. Section IV, 4.)
 ¡Qué casa tan hermosa! What a beautiful house!

Whenever the adjective follows the noun in such an expression as this, it is preceded by **tan**.

XX. Reflexive Verbs and Pronouns

1. The *Reflexive Pronouns* are identical in form with the conjunctive object pronouns (Section XVI, 1), with the exception of:

se, himself, herself, itself, themselves, yourself, yourselves.

Se always *precedes any other pronoun* as object of a verb, otherwise the reflexive follows the ordinary rules as to position.

For *emphasis* the prepositional form of the corresponding personal pronoun is added, together with **mismo** (self), which is variable:

e.g. Hablaba siempre de sí mismo.
 He always talked about himself.

In the *plural* of the *imperative affirmative* (first and second persons—not in the polite form) the final *s* or *d* of the verb is dropped:

e.g. Lavémonos, lavaos, for lavemos nos, lavad os.

2. The *Passive Voice*, which is formed with *ser*, is very little used in Spanish, and its place is taken by the *active form* of the verb, *used reflexively*. This use of the reflexive is much wider than in French; it is particularly noticeable in public announcements:

e.g. Se cree, it is believed; se dice, it is said.

Se habla español. Spanish is spoken here.

Se cierra los domingos. Closed on Sundays.

If the subject of the sentence is personal it is better to use the passive voice, though the reflexive form of the active may be employed if the personal *a* precedes the logical subject.

3. *The following classes of verbs require notice:*

Verbs having reflexive forms with unusual meanings.

Ir, go.

Llegar, arrive.

Irse, go away.

Llegarse, approach.

Dormir, sleep.

Correr, run.

Dormirse, go to sleep.

Correrse, be ashamed.

Marchar, march.

Morir, die.

Marcharse, go away.

Morirse, be dying.

Verbs reflexive in form but not apparently so in sense.

Abstenerse, abstain.

Enojarse, get angry.

Acercarse, come near.

Equivocarse, make a mistake.

Acostarse, go to bed.

Esmerarse, do one's best.

Acordarse, remember.

Hacerse, become.

Alegrarse, be glad (about).

Levantarse, get up.

Arrepentirse, repent.

Olvidarse, forget.

Atreverse, dare.

Quejarse, complain.

Bajarse, get down.

Reírse, laugh (at).

Dolerse, be sorry for.

Sentarse, sit down.

Enfadarse, get angry.

Servirse,¹ have the kindness to.

Vestirse, dress.

¹ N.B.—Sírvasse Vd. entrar. Please come in.

XXI. Numerals

1. CARDINALS:

1. uno, una.	16. diez y seis. ¹	100. cien, ciento (Section IX, 3).
2. dos.	17. diez y siete.	101. ciento uno.
3. tres.	18. diez y ocho.	102 etc., ciento dos, etc.
4. cuatro.	19. diez y nueve.	200. doscientos, doscientas.
5. cinco.	20. veintE.	300. trescientos, -tas.
6. seis.	21 etc., veinte y uno, etc.	400. cuatrocientos, -tas.
7. siete.	30. treintA.	500. quinientos, -tas.
8. ocho.	31 etc., treinta y uno, etc.	700. setecientos, -tas.
9. nueve.	40. cuarenta.	900. novecientos, -tas.
10. diez.	50. cincuenta.	1,000. mil.
11. once.	60. sesenta.	2,000. dos mil.
12. doce.	70. setenta.	100,000. cien mil.
13. trece.	80. ochenta.	1,000,000. un millon.
14. catorce.	90. noventa.	
15. quince.		

The forms **oncecientos**, **docientos** are to be avoided, and the corresponding forms with **mil** employed instead. The last of several numbers is generally preceded by **y**: **Mil ochocientos cuarenta y dos**.

2. ORDINALS:

1. primero (Section IX, 3).	5. quinto.	9. noveno, nono.
2. segundo.	6. sexto.	10. décimo.
3. tercero (Section IX, 3).	7. séptimo.	11. undécimo.
4. cuarto.	8. octavo.	12. duodécimo.

These form their feminines and plurals like adjectives. Beyond 12, the cardinal number is preferred to the ordinal:

e.g. **el tomo diez y seis**; **la página veinticuatro**.

In speaking of monarchs, the ordinal is used up to 10:

e.g. **Carlos Quinto**; **Luis Catorce**.

¹The compound numbers, up to 99, are also written thus: **dieciseis**, **veintiuno**, **treintidos**, etc.

3. FRACTIONS.—The principal fractional numerals are:

$\frac{1}{2}$ un medio.	$\frac{1}{4}$ un cuarto.	}	$\frac{1}{10}$ un décimo.
$\frac{1}{3}$ un tercio.	$\frac{1}{5}$ un quinto.	}	$\frac{1}{20}$ un veint(e)avo.

So also dos tercios ($\frac{2}{3}$), tres cuartos ($\frac{3}{4}$), etc.

Note the substantive:

La mitad, the half. (Cf. French, la moitié).

4. Other Phrases with Numerals:

Una vez, once.	Una veintena, a score.
Dos veces, twice (etc.).	Una centena (un centenar), a hundred.
Un par, a pair.	Un millar, a thousand.
Una decena, ten. (Cf. French, <i>une dizaine</i>).	Doble, double.
Una docena, a dozen.	Triple, treble.
Unos doscientos habitantes, <i>some</i> two hundred inhabitants.	Cuadruplo, quadruple, etc.

XXII. Time

Some characteristic idiomatic phrases may be classed under this heading:

¿Qué hora es? What is the time?

La una, one o'clock; las dos, two o'clock; las tres, three o'clock, etc.

(The number agrees with *hora*, feminine, understood.)

Es la una, it is one o'clock; son las dos, it is two o'clock.

5.15, las cinco y cuarto.

5.30, las cinco y media.

5.45, las seis menos cuarto.

7.20 a.m., las siete y veinte *de la mañana*.

2.40 p.m., las tres menos veinte *de la tarde*.

Buenos días. Good morning.

Buenas tardes. Good afternoon or evening (until dark).

Buenas noches. Good night (after dark).

XXIII. Weather

1. *Impersonal expressions exist with a number of verbs, including the following:*

Helar, to freeze.	Tronar, to thunder.
Llover, to rain.	Diluviar, to pour with rain.
Nevar, to snow.	Granizar, to hail.
Nublarse, to get cloudy.	

e.g. Llueve, it rains; lloverá, it will rain.

2. *Idioms with hacer:*

¿Qué tiempo hace?	What sort of weather is it?		
Hace buen (mal) tiempo.	It is good (bad) weather.		
Hace mucho frío.	It is very cold.		
Hace viento.	It is windy.		
Hace calor.	It is warm.	Hace fresco.	It is cool.
Hace frío.	It is cold.	Hace (or hay) sol.	It is sunny.

3. *Idioms with haber:*

Hay luna.	The moon is shining.	Hay polvo.	It is dusty.
Hay neblina.	It is foggy.	Hay lodo.	It is muddy.

All these idioms may be used in other tenses of the verbs involved:

e.g. Hará calor. It will be warm.
Había polvo. It was dusty.

XXIV. Dates and Ages

1. The *Cardinal* numbers (Section XXI) are used to express the days of the month. The one exception is *el primero*, the first, abbreviated as 1°.

“*Of*” is expressed, not only before the month (as in English), but also *before the year*:

e.g. El 17 de octubre de 1917 or octubre 17 de 1917.

Days of the Week.

domingo,	Sunday.	jueves,	Thursday.
lunes,	Monday.	viernes,	Friday.
martes,	Tuesday.	sábado,	Saturday.
miércoles,	Wednesday.		

Months.

enero,	January.	julio,	July.
febrero,	February.	agosto,	August.
marzo,	March.	se(p)tiembre,	September.
abril,	April.	octubre,	October.
mayo,	May.	noviembre,	November.
junio,	June.	diciembre	December.

Seasons.

<i>La primavera,</i>	Spring.	<i>El otoño,</i>	Autumn.
<i>El verano,</i>	Summer.	<i>El invierno,</i>	Winter.

The definite article is always written with days of the week except in dating letters:

e.g. *Se fué el miércoles.* He left on Wednesday.
 But *Miércoles el 17 de octubre de 1917.*

2. IDIOMS:

What is the date? { ¿Qué fecha es? ¿Qué día es hoy?
 ¿A cómo estamos?
 ¿A cuántos estamos?
 ¿En qué día (mes) estamos?

What day of the month is it? ¿En qué día del mes estamos?
 It is the seventeenth. *Estamos a diez y siete.*

“*Ago*” is rendered by *ha* standing *after* its noun.
Hace may also be used *before* the noun:

Muchos años ha (many years ago).
Hace mucho (a long time ago).
Hace dos años (two years ago).

3. PHRASES:

Hoy, to-day.

Ayer, yesterday.

Anteayer, the day before yesterday.

Pasado mañana, the day after to-morrow.

Anoche, last night.

Mañana, to-morrow.

Mañana por la $\left\langle \begin{array}{l} \text{mañana,} \\ \text{tarde,} \end{array} \right\rangle$ to-morrow $\left\langle \begin{array}{l} \text{morning.} \\ \text{evening.} \end{array} \right\rangle$ Ayer por la $\left\langle \begin{array}{l} \text{mañana,} \\ \text{tarde,} \end{array} \right\rangle$ yesterday $\left\langle \begin{array}{l} \text{morning.} \\ \text{evening.} \end{array} \right\rangle$

El año pasado, last year.

Ocho días, a week.

El año que viene, next year.

Quince días, a fortnight.

De hoy en ocho días, a week to-day.

El 5 (cinco) del actual, del corriente (del último).

The 5th inst. (ult.). [In business letters.]

4. AGE:

¿Cuántos años tiene Vd.? How old are you?

Tengo treinta años (cumplidos). - I am (just) thirty.

Nací en 1887. I was born in 1887.

El día del santo, the Saint's day; los cumpleaños, birthday.

XXV. General Remarks on Verbs

1. There are three *Regular Conjugations* in Spanish:

The infinitive of the first conjugation ends in -AR (Section XXXIV).

" " second conjugation " -ER (Section XXXV).

" " third conjugation " -IR.

The so-called *third* or *-IR conjugation* is not conjugated in this book in full, as it is exactly like the second conjugation, with the exception of two tenses:

(1) In the Present Indicative *-imos*, *-ís* occur for *-emos*, *-éis* of the second conjugation.

(2) In the Imperative, second person plural, *-id* occurs for *-ed*:

e.g. Deber, to owe; debemos, we owe; debéis, you owe.

¡Debed! Owe!

Vivir, to live; vivimos, we live; vivís, you live.

¡Vivid! Live!

2. *Four common verbs* must be learned at an early stage. These are *tener* and *haber* (to have), and *estar* and *ser* (to be). They are conjugated in Sections XXX-XXXIV, and the differences between each pair of verbs are fully explained in Sections XXVIII and XXIX.

3. Next come certain *verbs with small irregularities of stem* which otherwise are perfectly regular. Some of these undergo changes in their *root-vowels* (Section XXXVI), and others change their *consonants* before certain vowels occurring in their terminations (Section XXXVII). With a little application the student will soon master these changes, and he will find it helpful, when he has done so, to keep a list of the verbs which change their root-vowels as he finds them in his reading.

4. Lastly, there are many *irregular verbs*, a full list of which is given on pp. 64-9. The irregular tenses are printed in heavy type; in the next section it will be shown how a number of tenses, even in these verbs, are formed according to rule. The most important of the irregular verbs can easily be found from their meanings.

XXVI. Formation of Certain Tenses (i)

Certain tenses of both regular and irregular verbs are always formed according to rule. They are therefore not repeated in full on the pages where the irregular verbs are conjugated.

1. The *Imperfect Indicative*—

Of *-AR* verbs is formed by adding to the *present stem* the endings:

-aba, -abas, -aba; -ábamos, abais, aban.

Of **-ER** and **-IR** verbs is formed by adding the endings:

-ía, -ías, -ía; -íamos, -íais, -ían.

[There are three exceptions to this rule: *Ir* (to go); *ver* (to see); *ser* (to be). See under Irregular Verbs, pp. 64-9.]

2. The *Future Indicative* of all verbs is formed by adding to the *Infinitive* or to a "future stem":

-é, -ás, -á; -emos, -éis, -án.

[These endings are identical with those of the present indicative of *haber*, to have.]

3. The *Conditional Mood* of all verbs is formed by adding to the *future stem*:

-ía, -ías, -ía; -íamos, -íais, -ían.

[These endings are identical with those of the imperfect indicative of *haber*, to have.]

4. The *Present Subjunctive* is formed by adding to the *present stem*—

Of **-AR** verbs:

-e, -es, -e; -emos, -éis, -en.

Of **-ER, -IR** verbs:

-a, -as, -a; -amos, -áis, -an.

5. The *Imperfect Subjunctive* is formed by adding to the *preterite stem*—

Of **-AR** verbs:

-ase, -ases, -ase; -ásemos, -aseis, -asen.

Of **-ER, -IR** verbs:

-iese, -ieses, -iese; -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen.

6. The *Future Subjunctive* is formed by adding to the *preterite stem*—

Of **-AR** verbs:

-are, -ares, -are; -áremos, -areis, -aren.

Of **-ER, -IR** verbs:

-iere, -ieres, -iere; -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren.

7. The *Conditional Subjunctive* is formed by adding to the *preterite stem*—

Of **-AR** verbs:

-ara, -aras, -ara; -áramos, -arais, -aran.

Of **-ER, -IR** verbs:

-iera, -ieras, -iera; -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran.

XXVII. Formation of Certain Tenses (ii)

1. The principal *compound tenses* are formed as follows:

Past Indefinite (or Perfect) = Present Indicative of *haber* + Past Participle of the verb.

Pluperfect = Imperfect Indicative of *haber* + Past Participle of the verb.

Past Anterior = Preterite Indicative of *haber* + Past Participle of the verb.

The uses of these tenses are explained in Section XLVIII. There are also the Future and the Conditional Perfect tenses, formed respectively from the future and conditional of *haber*, with the addition of the past participle of the verb. All the above five tenses have parallel tenses, formed in exactly the same way, in the Subjunctive mood.

EXAMPLES.—**Hablar**, to speak.

<i>Past Indefinite:</i>	He hablado.	I have spoken.
<i>Pluperfect:</i>	Había hablado.	I had spoken.
<i>Past Anterior:</i>	Hube hablado.	I had spoken.
<i>Future Perfect:</i>	Habré hablado.	I shall have spoken.
<i>Conditional Perfect:</i>	Habría hablado.	I should have spoken.

2. The various *verbal stems* mentioned in the previous section may here be enumerated, though the first person

singular of each of the tenses formed from them is given wherever necessary:

Present stem, from which are derived the Present and Imperfect Indicative, the Present Subjunctive, and the Imperative.

Future stem, from which are derived the Future Indicative and the Conditional, and which is usually represented by the Infinitive of the verb.

Preterite stem, from which are derived the Preterite Indicative and all the tenses of the Subjunctive mood except the Present.

XXVIII. *Tener* and *Haber*

1. Both **tener** and **haber** mean, to have; **tener**, however, is always used when "have" is equivalent to "possess", while **haber** is an auxiliary:

e.g. **Tengo dos plumas.**

I have (i.e. I possess) two pens.

¿**Tiene Vd. un reloj?**

Have you (do you possess) a watch?

He escrito muchas cartas.

I have written a great many letters.

Lo han tenido.

They *have had* (i.e. possessed) it.

As is shown in Section XXIII, 3, certain impersonal phrases exist in which **haber** is a principal verb, and there are also a few others which are given below. **Tener**, too, may be employed idiomatically as an auxiliary; in this construction, which is not common, the past participle of the principal verb agrees with its object, whereas when conjugated with **haber** it is invariable:

e.g. **Tengo escritas estas cartas**, but **He escrito muchas cartas**

2. *Some Idioms with Tener:*

Tengo que (ir). I must (go).

Tengo calor. I am hot.

Tengo miedo. I am afraid.

Tengo frío. I am cold.

Tengo sueño. I am sleepy.

Tengo hambre. I am hungry.

Tiene quince años. He is 15

Tengo sed. I am thirsty.

years old.

Tengo razón. I am right.

Tenga Vd. la bondad de decírmelo. Please tell me.

Some Idioms with Haber (see also Section XXIII, 3):

He de (ir), I have (to go), less emphatic than "tengo que", rightly signifies duty, but is often used to indicate little more than future time or a customary action. Thus: *Mañana ha de venir el jefe*, The chief comes to-morrow (or "will come", "is to come").

No lo he menester. I do not need it.

Hay. There is, there are. Muchos años ha. Many years ago.

El asesino no fué habido. The murderer was not caught.

¡Que santa gloria haya! (of the dead). May he rest in peace!

Habérselas con alguno. To have a thing out with someone.

XXIX. *Estar* and *Ser*

1. The distinction between these two verbs, both of which stand for "to be", is more subtle than that between *tener* and *haber*. The chief differences may be summarised as follows:

Estar	Ser
(1) Expresses what is <i>temporary</i> or <i>accidental</i> .	(1) Expresses what is <i>permanent</i> .
(2) Is the auxiliary of the <i>progressive</i> (or <i>continuous</i>) form of the verb.	(2) Is the auxiliary of the <i>Passive Voice</i> .
(3) Is invariably used of <i>place</i> . [Its original meaning was "to stand".]	(3) Is invariably used of a <i>profession</i> , and of any <i>essential characteristic</i> .

Under the first of these headings the student has the essential difference between the two verbs; this will best be grasped by a study of such phrases as the following:

Hoy está muy triste. He is very sad to-day.	Es muy severo. He is very strict (i.e. by nature).
Estoy enfermo. I am ill (i.e. temporarily).	Soy viejo. I am old (i.e. my permanent condition).
Mi hijo está de capitán. My son is acting as captain.	Mi hijo es capitán. My son is (by profession) a captain.
¿Quién está a la puerta? Who is (i.e. place) at the door?	¿Quién es? Who is it?

[The person may be standing at the door in both cases, but it is only in the first that stress is laid upon his *position*.]

No están trabajando. They are not working. (Progressive form of no trabajan.)	He sido detenido por tres horas. I have been kept for three hours. (Passive Voice.)
El banco está sucio. The bench is dirty (i.e. accidentally so, not in its essential nature).	El banco es de madera. The bench is wooden (i.e. its essential quality).

2. Often the same word can be used with *estar* or with *ser* in two different senses:

- Mi tío es cojo.
My uncle is lame.
- Mi tío está cojo.
My uncle is walking lame (i.e. is temporarily lame).
- El hombre es loco.
The man is mad (i.e. a lunatic).
- El hombre está loco.
The man is furious with rage.
- Los niños son pálidos.
The children have a pale complexion.
- Los niños están pálidos.
The children are looking pale (i.e. because they are ill).
- Este discípulo es muy atento.
This pupil is very attentive (i.e. by nature).
- Hoy no está atento.
He is not attentive to-day.

The three following pairs of phrases are semi-idiomatic:

- | | |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| { Es bueno. He is good. | { Es malo. He is bad. |
| { Está bueno. He is well. | { Está malo. He is ill (unwell). |
| { Es cansado. He is tiresome. | |
| { Está cansado. He is tired. | |

XXX. *Tener*, To Have

INFINITIVE: Tener, to have. *PARTICIPLES*:
Teniendo, having; tenido, had.

PRESENT INDICATIVE. I have.	tengo. tienes. tiene.	tenemos. tenéis. tienen.
IMPERFECT INDICATIVE. I had.	tenía. tenías. tenía.	teníamos. teníais. tenían.
PRETERITE INDICATIVE. I had.	tuve. tuviste. tuvo.	tuvimos. tuvisteis. tuvieron.
FUTURE INDICATIVE. I shall have.	tendré. tendrás. tendrá.	tendremos. tendréis. tendrán.
CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE. I should have.	tendría. tendrías. tendría.	tendríamos. tendríais. tendrían.
PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. (That) I may have.	tenga. tengas. tenga.	tengamos. tengáis. tengan.
IMPERATIVE. Have!		IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE. tuviese, etc.
ten. tenga. (With Vd.) ¹	tengamos. tened. tengan. (With Vds.) ¹	FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE. tuviere, etc.
		CONDITIONAL SUBJUNCTIVE. tuviera, etc.

¹ Note that *in all verbs* the third person of the Present Subjunctive is used for the Imperative in polite address, and that Vd. (Vds.) is written after the verb:

e.g. Tenga Vd. la bondad de . . .

XXXI. *Haber*, To Have

INFINITIVE: *Haber*, to have. *PARTICIPLES*:
Habiendo, having; *habido*, had.

PRESENT INDICATIVE. I have.	he. has. ha (hay, there is, there are). ¹	hemos. habéis. han.
IMPERFECT INDICATIVE. I had.	había. habías. había.	habíamos. habíais. habían.
PRETERITE INDICATIVE. I had.	hube. hubiste. hubo.	hubimos. hubisteis. hubieron.
FUTURE INDICATIVE. I shall have.	habré. habrás. habrá.	habremos. habréis. habrán.
CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE. I should have.	habría. habrías. habría.	habríamos. habrías. habrían.
PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. (That) I may have.	haya. hayas. haya.	hayamos. hayáis. hayan.
IMPERATIVE. Have!		
(hé). ² haya (Vd.).	hayamos. habed. hayan (Vds.).	
	IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE. hubiese, etc.	
	FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE. hubiere, etc.	
	CONDITIONAL SUBJUNCTIVE. hubiera, etc.	

¹ The other tenses of "there is", "there are" are rendered by the corresponding tenses of *haber*: e.g. *Había*, there was; *habrá*, there will be. In the third person singular of the Present Indicative the form *hay* and *not ha* is used.

² The form *hé* is very rarely used. The verb in the phrase *hé aquí* is generally considered to be a corruption of *ve* (from *ver*).

XXXII. *Estar*, To Be

INFINITIVE: *Estar*, to be. *PARTICIPLES*:
Estando, being; *estado*, been.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

I am.

estoy.

estás.

está.

estamos.

estáis.

están.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

I was.

estaba.

estabas.

estaba.

estábamos.

estabais.

estaban.

PRETERITE INDICATIVE.

I was.

estuve.

estuviste.

estuvo.

estuvimos.

estuvisteis.

estuvieron.

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

I shall be.

estaré.

estarás.

estará.

estaremos.

estaréis.

estarán.

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

I should be.

estaría.

estarías.

estaría.

estaríamos.

estaríais.

estarían.

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

(That) I may be.

esté.

estés.

esté.

estemos.

estéis.

estén.

IMPERATIVE.

Be!

está.

esté (Vd.).

estemos.

estad.

estén (Vds.).

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

estuviese, etc.

FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE.

estuviere, etc.

CONDITIONAL SUBJUNCTIVE.

estuviera, etc.

XXXIII. *Ser*, To Be

INFINITIVE: *Ser*, to be. *PARTICIPLES*:
Siendo, being; *sido*, been.

PRESENT INDICATIVE. I am.	soy. eres. es.	somos. sois. son.
IMPERFECT INDICATIVE. I was.	era. eras. era.	éramos. erais. eran.
PRETERITE INDICATIVE. I was.	fuí. fuiste. fué.	fuímos. fuisteis. fueron.
FUTURE INDICATIVE. I shall be.	seré. serás. será.	seremos. seréis. serán.
CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE. I should be.	sería. serías. sería.	seríamos. seríais. serían.
PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. (That) I may be.	sea seas. sea.	seamos. seáis. sean.

IMPERATIVE.	
Be!	
sé.	seamos.
sea (Vd.).	sed.
	sean (Vds.).

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE. fuese, etc.
FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE. fuere, etc.
CONDITIONAL SUBJUNCTIVE. fuera, etc.

XXXIV. First Conjugation, -AR

Hablar, To Speak

INFINITIVE: Hablar, to speak. *PARTICIPLES*:
Hablando, speaking; hablado, spoken.

PRESENT INDICATIVE. I speak.	hablo. hablas. habla.	hablamos. habláis. hablan.
IMPERFECT INDICATIVE. I spoke.	hablaba. hablabas. hablaba.	hablábamos. hablabais. hablaban.
PRETERITE INDICATIVE. I spoke.	hablé. hablaste. habló.	hablamos. hablasteis. hablaron.
FUTURE INDICATIVE. I shall speak.	hablaré. hablarás. hablará.	hablaremos. hablaréis. hablarán.
CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE. I should speak.	hablaría. hablarías. hablaría.	hablaríamos. hablaríais. hablarían.
PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE. (That) I may speak.	hable. hables. hable.	hablemos. habléis. hablen.
IMPERATIVE. Speak!		
habla.	hablemos.	
hable (Vd.).	hablad.	
	hablen (Vds.).	
	IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE. hablase, etc.	
	FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE. hablare, etc.	
	CONDITIONAL SUBJUNCTIVE. hablara, etc.	

XXXV. Second Conjugation, *-ER*

Deber, To Owe

INFINITIVE: Deber, to owe. *PARTICIPLES*:
Debiendo, owing; debido, owed.

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

I owe.

debo.**debes.****debe.****debemos.****debéis.****deben.**

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

I owed.

debía.**debías.****debía.****debíamos.****debíais.****debían.**

PRETERITE INDICATIVE.

I owed.

debí.**debiste.****debió.****debimos.****debisteis.****debieron.**

FUTURE INDICATIVE.

I shall owe.

deberé.**deberás.****deberá.****deberemos.****deberéis.****deberán.**

CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE.

I should owe.

debería.**deberías.****debería.****deberíamos.****deberíais.****deberían.**

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.

(That) I may owe.

deba.**debas.****deba.****debamos.****debáis.****deban.**

IMPERATIVE.

Owe!

debe.**deba** (Vd.).**debamos.****debed.****deban** (Vds.).

IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.

debiese, etc.

FUTURE SUBJUNCTIVE.

debiere, etc.

CONDITIONAL SUBJUNCTIVE.

debiera, etc.

The following phrases with *deber* should be constantly practised, together with the similar ones with *poder* (to be able) on p. 69, Note B:

debo. I am to, have to, must (less emphatic than *tengo que*).

debía. I was to, had to.

deberé. I shall have to.

debiera (commonly used for *debería*). I ought to.

habría debido. . . . I ought to have. . . . [Cf. Fr. *j'aurais dû*.]

XXXVI. Irregularities of Root-Vowel

[As there are a large number of verbs in Spanish which follow the partially irregular paradigms given below, the student is strongly recommended to *make lists of the commonest* of them as he finds them in his reading. The lists given in Appendix II may be taken as a basis, and further examples added in the blank space provided as they occur.]

1. Certain verbs, which are otherwise regular, *change their root-vowels* whenever the stress is on the stem:

i.e. In the *Singular* (all persons) and *Third Person Plural* of the *Present Indicative, Imperative, and Present Subjunctive*.

These verbs change root **E** to **IE**, or **O** to **UE**:

e.g. *Perder*, to lose; *pierdo*, I lose; *pierde*, he loses; *pierda* Vd., lose!

Mostrar, to show; *muestro*, I show; *muestra*, he shows; *muestre* Vd., show!

Note.—All these verbs belong to the first and second conjugations, with the exception of *discernir*, *concernir*, *adquirir*, and *inquirir*. *Jugar* has u for o in the infinitive. In *Errar* the initial i- is written y- thus: *yerro*, *yerra*, etc. Similarly the accented ue- of *oler* is written hue-: *huelo*, *huela*, etc.

2. Certain other verbs, *besides changing the root-vowel* when it is stressed, undergo a further change as follows:

When not accented, E becomes I, and O becomes U if an a, ie, or ió occurs in the following syllable:

i.e. In the *Present Participle*.
Preterite—Third Persons Singular and Plural.
Present Subjunctive—First and Second Persons Plural.
Imperfect, Conditional, and Future Subjunctives—all persons.

Sentir, to feel.

Sentimos, we feel (not stressed).

Siento, I feel (stressed).

Sintiendo, feeling; *sintió*, he felt; *sintamos*, let us feel.

(Not stressed, but followed by a, ie, or ió.)

e.g. **Dormir**, to sleep.

Dormimos, we sleep (not stressed).

Duermo, I sleep (stressed).

Durmiendo, sleeping; **durmió**, he slept; **durmamos**, let us sleep.
(Not stressed, but followed by **a**, **ie**, or **ió**.)

Note.—All these verbs belong to the third conjugation.

3. A third class undergoes the same changes as Class 2, with the exception that the root-vowel (**E**) changes to **I** both when stressed and also when not stressed but followed by **a**, **ie**, or **ió**:

e.g. **Pedir**, to ask.

Pedimos, we ask (not stressed).

Pido, I ask (stressed).

Pidió, he asked (not stressed, but followed by **a**, **ie**, or **ió**).

Pidamos, let us ask.

Pidiendo, asking.

Similarly, **Vestir**, to dress.

Vestimos, we dress (not stressed).

Visto, I dress (stressed).

Vistió, he dressed (not stressed, but followed by **ió**).

Note.—All these verbs belong to the third conjugation. If an “i” of the termination follows an **i** or **ñ** of the stem, it is omitted: e.g. **Reír**, to laugh; pres. part. **riendo** (for **ri-iendo**); **teñir**, to dye; pres. part. **tiñendo** (= **tiñ-iendo**).

The verb **erguir**, to erect, may be conjugated according either to Class 2 or to Class 3. In the former case initial **i** is written as **y** wherever it occurs. Thus **yergo** and **irgo** exist for the Present Indicative; **yerga** and **irga** for the Present Subjunctive, and so forth. Before **o** or **a**, the “u” of the stem disappears: **irgamos**, let us erect (Pres. Subj.).

For a fuller conjugation of paradigms the student is referred to Appendix II.

XXXVII. Irregularities of Consonant

1. Some otherwise regular verbs change the consonant of the stem before various vowels in order to preserve the sound of that consonant throughout the conjugation of the verb:

Termination of the Infinitive.	Change.	Tenses Affected.	Examples.
-CAR.	{ C into QU before E. }	{ Preterite, First Singular; Present Subjunctive. }	Buscar, busqué.
-GAR.	{ G into GU before E. }	"	{ Pagar, pagué.
-ZAR.	{ Z into C before E. }	"	{ Alcanzar, alcancé.
-CER. -CIR. preceded by a consonant. }	c into Z before A or O.	{ Pres. Indic., First Singular, Present Subjunctive. }	Vencer, venzo.
-GER. } -GIR. }	{ G into J before A or O. }	"	{ Coger, cojo.
-QUIR.	{ QU into C before A or O. }	"	{ Delinquir, delinco.
-GUIR.	{ GU into G before A or O. }	"	{ Distinguir, distingo.

Verbs ending in **-guar** take a diæresis before **e**; those in **güir** keep the diæresis only before **i**:

Averiguar, to investigate; **averigüé**, I investigated (pret.).

Argüir, to argue; **argüí**, I argued (pret.); **arguyó**, he argued (pret.).

2. INCEPTIVE ENDINGS. — Most verbs of the second and third conjugations ending in **-cer** or **-cir**

preceded by a vowel insert a *z* before the *c* whenever this is followed by *o* or *a*. This change affects:

First Person Singular, Present Indicative, Present Subjunctive (throughout):

e.g. *Conocer*, to know; *conozco*, I know; *conozca*, etc., (that) I may know, etc.

The *principal exceptions* are *cocer*, to cook; *escocer*, to smart; *mecer*, to rock; *hacer* and its compounds; *decir* and its compounds; *placer*, to please; and *yacer*, to lie. All these are irregular, except the first three, which are regular, but root-changing.

Verbs ending in -ducir, besides changing *c* to *zc*, also form *preterites* with *-j*. Thus *-duje*, *-dujiste*, *-dujo*, *-dujimos*, *-dujisteis*, *-dujeron*.

XXXVIII. Contracted Verbs

The euphonic rule upon which the peculiarities of contracted verbs depend may be stated thus:

Unaccented i cannot stand between two vowels, nor between ll or ñ and a vowel.

This involves the following changes in verbs which otherwise are often regular:

1. When the stem ends in a *vowel*, the *i* of the endings *-ie-*, *-ió* is changed to *y*:

e.g. *Le-er*, to read.

Present Participle: *Leyendo* (= *le-iendo*).

But *Past Participle*: *Leído*.

Preterite: *Leí*, *leiste*, *leyó* (= *le-ió*), *leímos*, *leísteis*, *leyeron* (*le-ieron*), etc.

e.g. *Destruir*, to destroy; *huir*, to flee.

Present Participle: *destruyendo*, *huyendo*.

Preterite, Third Person Sing.: *destruyó*, *huyó*.

Third Person Plur.: *destruyeron*, *huyeron*, etc.

Where the **u** in **-uir** verbs is simply inserted to harden the preceding consonant (e.g. **distinguir**) this rule does not apply, e.g. **distingo** (pres. indic.), **distinguirfa** (conditional).

2. When the stem ends in **-ll** or **-ñ**, the **i** of the endings **-ie**, **-ió** disappears:

e.g. **Bullir**, to boil.

Present Participle: **Bullendo** (bull-iendo).

But *Past Participle*: **Bullido**.

Preterite, Third Sing.: **Bulló** (= bull-ió).

Third Plur.: **Bulleron** (= bull-ieron).

e.g. **Gruñir**, to grunt.

Present Participle: **Gruñendo** (= gruñ-iendo).

Preterite, Third Sing.: **Gruñó** (= gruñ-ió).

Third Plur.: **Gruñeron** (= gruñ-ieron).

XXXIX. The Infinitive

1. THE INFINITIVE AS A VERBAL NOUN.—

This construction corresponds to the English present participle used with similar force:

Enseñar es aprender.

To teach is to learn. (Teaching is learning.)

Generally the definite article precedes the Infinitive:

El trabajar demasiado es malo.

It is bad to work too hard. (Working too hard is bad.)

The English construction "*at* (or *on*) + present participle" is rendered in Spanish by **al** with the Infinitive:

e.g. **Al oírlo se fué.** On hearing it he went away.

2. The verbs **oír** and **ver** are followed immediately by the Infinitive:

Oyó subir a su amo. He heard his master coming up.

Vió salir a su hermano. He saw his brother going out.

3. It cannot be over-emphasised that a dependent Infinitive can only occur in Spanish *when the logical subject*

of the *principal clause* is the same as that of the clause represented by the *Infinitive*. In English it is possible to say (e.g.) "We want him to come", although the "wanting" and the "coming" are referred to different persons. In Spanish such a sentence must be rendered by a **que** clause, followed by the Indicative or the Subjunctive as occasion demands.

Thus: Queremos que venga. We want him to come.
 Creía que estudiaban. I believed them to be studying, or
 (I thought they were studying).

The student must not, then, be misled by the English construction, nor must he forget that in English a clause is often preferred to the Infinitive when the subjects are identical:

e.g. Creía ver un elefante. He thought he saw an elephant.

4. With verbs expressing *permission*, and with **hacer** (in the sense of "to have something done"), the Infinitive may be used even if the subjects are not the same:

e.g. Hizo hacer unos dibujos. He had some drawings made.
 Deje Vd. hablar al muchacho. Let the boy speak.

For the translation of "to" before an Infinitive see Section XLIV.

XL. Participles

1. PRESENT PARTICIPLE.—The Present Participle is *invariable*. It is used as in English with the verb "to be" (**ESTAR**) in the *continuous* or *progressive* form of various tenses. The verb **estar** cannot be used in this construction with the present participles of the verbs **ser**, **estar**, **ir**, **venir**:

e.g. Está trabajando. He is working.
 Estaba llamándonos. He was calling us.
 Estará estudiando. He will be studying.

[Tener, venir, and ir are sometimes substituted for **estar** in this construction, but the student need not at the present stage attempt to use other verbs than **estar**.]

2. PAST PARTICIPLE:

(a) Past Participles used purely as adjectives, or in an absolute construction,¹ *vary like adjectives*:

e.g. Estos poetas distinguidos.

These distinguished poets.

Escritas las cartas, salió.

Having written the letters, he went out.

(b) Past Participles conjugated with *ser* and *estar* agree with the *subject*:

e.g. Mi madre es amada. My mother is loved.

La carta está escrita. The letter is (= has been) written.

(c) Past Participles conjugated with *haber* are *invariable*:

e.g. Los libros que he hallado. The books I have found.

When *tener* or *llevar* is used, as is often the case, for *haber*, the past participle *must agree* with its noun.

Thus: Tiene hallados los libros. He has found the books.

Llevo escritas doce cartas. I have written twelve letters.

Note that *reflexive verbs* and *verbs of motion* are conjugated, as in English, with the verb “to have” (*haber*); not, as in French, with the verb “to be”.

3. SOME IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES.—

A few verbs, which are otherwise regular, have irregular past participles, sometimes in addition to a regular form, sometimes existing alone. These irregularities also extend to the compounds of the verbs:

Infinitive.	Past Participle.		Infinitive.	Past Participle.
prender.	prendido.	preso.	escribir.	escrito.
romper.	rompido.	roto.	imprimir.	impreso.
volver.	vuelto.		oprimir.	oprimido. opreso.
abrir.	abierto.		suprimir.	suprimido. supreso.
cubrir.	cubierto.			
solver.	suelto.			

¹ This absolute construction, which resembles the Latin “ablative absolute”, may also be used in conjunction with a preposition of time: *antes de* *después de*, *luego de*, etc.:

e.g. Después de escritas las cartas, salió.

XLI. Use of the Subjunctive (i)

1. IN PRINCIPAL CLAUSES.—The Subjunctive is used to express commands, wishes, and entreaties. The “polite form” of the Imperative, it must be remembered, is identical with the third person (singular or plural) of the Subjunctive:

e.g. Que venga. Let him come.
 ¡Ojalá venga! O that he would come!
 Venga Vd. Come!

Even when the “polite form” of address is not used, the *negative* of the Imperative must always be expressed by the Present Subjunctive:

e.g. Ven, venid! Come!
 But: No vengas, no vengáis! Do not come!

2. IN DEPENDENT CLAUSES AFTER CERTAIN VERBS:

(i) After verbs expressing *wish, request, command, permission, or prohibition*:

e.g. Quiero que mi padre lo lea. I want my father to read it.¹

(ii) After verbs expressing *fear or doubt*:

e.g. Dudo que haya venido el médico.
 I doubt whether the doctor has come.

¹ It must be clearly grasped that *if the logical subject of the principal clause is the same as that of the dependent clause, the infinitive and not the subjunctive is used*:

e.g. Quiero leerlo. I want to read it.

Otherwise the subjunctive with *que must* be used, even though in English the verb is in the Infinitive. This is also stated in Section XXXIX, 3, but is so frequently misunderstood that it is repeated here for convenience.

(iii) After verbs of *thinking* used *negatively* or *interrogatively*:

e.g. ¿Cree Vd. que llegue hoy?
Do you think he will arrive to-day?

No creo que esté malo.
I do not think he is ill.

But: Creo que llegará hoy.
I think he will arrive to-day.

(iv) After verbs denoting *joy* or *sorrow*, *hope*, *admiration*, *surprise*, and other *emotions*:

e.g. Siento que no sea verdad.
I am sorry it is not true.

Me alegro que (or de que) no cueste demasiado.
I am glad it does not cost too much.

(v) After *impersonal expressions*, unless they express *certainty*:

e.g. Puede que haga calor.
It may be [that it will be] hot.

Es posible que ella no venga.
It is possible that she will not come.

But: Es cierto (es verdad, es seguro) que está malo.

[Notice that *se dice* when affirmative takes the *Indicative*; when negative, the *Subjunctive*.]

(vi) After a *relative the antecedent of which is indefinite*:¹

e.g. Busco un profesor que **hable** bien el castellano. (Cf. Section VII, 1.)

¿Conoce Vd. alguien que **quiera** cambiar lecciones conmigo?
No hay mal que cien años **dure**.

Todo lo que se **refiera** a Vd. me interesa.

Dígame lo que **tenga** Vd. que decir.

Había muy poco que **llamase** la atención.

¹This is at once the most characteristic use of the Subjunctive, and the most difficult to explain. The student should grasp quite firmly the principle which is stated above, and apply it to the following examples and to others which he may meet in his reading.

XLII. Use of the Subjunctive (ii)

3. IN DEPENDENT CLAUSES AFTER CERTAIN CONJUNCTIONS:

(a)

After the following conjunctions (and a few others) the Subjunctive is *always* used:

a **condición de que**, on condition that.

a **fin de que**, **para que**, in order that.

a **menos que**, unless.

antes que, before.

como si, as if.

cuando quiera que, whenever.¹

más que, even if.

ni que, not even if.

sin que, without.

¹ Also e.g.:

Dondequiera que, wherever.

Cualquiera que, whatever.

Quienquiera que, whoever.

(b)

After the following conjunctions (and a few others) the Subjunctive is used to express *futurity*, *uncertainty*, or *possibility*:

apenas, al punto que, as soon as.

aunque, bien que, although.

comoquiera que, as, since.

cuando, when.

hasta que, until.

luego que, as soon as.

mientras, so long as.

siempre que, provided that.

supuesto que, supposing that.

For the use of the Indicative and the Subjunctive with these conjunctions, compare the following sentences:

Cuando venga, leeré su libro.

When I come (i.e. in the future),
I shall read your book.

Cuando viene a verme, lee siempre mis libros.

When he comes to see me, he
always reads my books.

Many of the so-called conjunctions which are added to these in grammars are in reality impersonal verbal phrases, and so fall under Rule (v), Section XLI.

4. USE OF TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

—The *Present Subjunctive* is used in a dependent clause when the principal verb is in the present or the future tense.

The *Imperfect Subjunctive* is used when the principal

verb is in the past tense. It is also used to express an unfulfilled condition (Section XLIII).

Note.—When the principal verb is in the past indefinite or in the conditional, the dependent verb varies between the present and the imperfect subjunctive, according to the meaning of the sentence.

The *Conditional Subjunctive* can sometimes be substituted for the imperfect, but it is less commonly used than this tense. *It often takes the place, however, of the Conditional Indicative*; this is especially true of *ser, deber, and poder*:

e.g. Vd. *debiera* (for *debería*) *hacerlo*. You ought to do it.

The *Future Subjunctive* is to-day usually replaced by the Present Subjunctive. Formerly its use was restricted to conditions, whence its second name of “hypothetical”.

XLIII. Conditional Sentences

1. The ordinary conditional sentence in Spanish presents but little difficulty. Unless the non-fulfilment of the condition is implied, the Indicative mood is used, and the tenses are the same as would be used in English:

e.g. *Si estudiamos, aprenderemos mucho.*

If we study we shall learn a great deal.

Si tengo dinero, lo gasto.

If I have money I spend it.

Si (more commonly *cuando*) *tenía dinero, lo gastaba.*

If I had money I used to spend it.

[Formerly it was usual to use the Future Subjunctive in the condition-clause, where now the Present Indicative is preferred. To-day the Future Subjunctive has practically disappeared from the current language, and remains only in legal phrases, proverbial expressions, etc.]

As explained in Section XLII, 3, certain conjunctions,

such as **mientras** and **siempre que**, take the Subjunctive when they are used to express futurity or uncertainty. **Si**, however, is not one of these, and is used, as in English, with the *Indicative*.

2. *Unfulfilled Conditions*.—If it is clear from the sentence that the condition spoken of was not fulfilled, there are several ways of rendering the verbs in Spanish.

The verb in the condition-clause may be in the *Imperfect* or *Conditional* of the *Subjunctive*.

The verb in the principal clause may be in the *Conditional Indicative* or the *Conditional Subjunctive*:

- e.g. (1) Si tuviese más dinero, compraría muchos libros.
 (2) Si tuviese más dinero, comprara muchos libros.
 (3) Si tuviera más dinero, compraría muchos libros.
 (4) Si tuviera más dinero, comprara muchos libros.

XLIV. Prepositions

I. "TO" BEFORE AN INFINITIVE:

(i) Most verbs, especially the commonest (**hacer**, **poder**, **desear**, **deber**, **querer**, **ver**, etc.), take *no preposition* before the Infinitive.

(ii) **De** occurs after nouns and adjectives, and after certain verbs denoting separation.

(iii) **Para** is used when the meaning is "in order to".

(iv) **A** is used after verbs of teaching and learning, beginning and continuing, most verbs of motion, and a few others.

- e.g. No pudo verlo. He could not see it.
 Debo escribir. I am to write.
 ¿Quiere Vd. dármelo? Will you give it me?
 Es tiempo de ir. It is time to go.
 Trabajo para vivir. I work (in order) to live.
 Empieza a llover. It is beginning to rain.
 Voy a buscar mi libro. I am going to look for my book.

2. All prepositions in Spanish are *followed by the Infinitive*:

e.g. *Antes de morir.* Before dying.
Sin verme. Without seeing me.

3. *Para and Por.*—The following points should be borne in mind with regard to these prepositions, which it is easy to confuse:

(i) "For" is usually expressed by *para*. If, however, it contains the idea of *equivalent* or *exchange*, it is translated by *por*, which generally means "through" or "by":

e.g. *Para mí,* for me; *por la calle,* along the street; *por la ventana,* through the window.

Les vendió su reloj por diez duros.
 He sold them his watch for ten dollars.

Trabajo por poco dinero.
 I work for a small wage.

(ii) *Por* is used after verbs in the passive voice with the force of English "by" when the agent is a living being or a personified thing. Otherwise *de* is used:

e.g. *El mundo fué creado por Dios.*
 The world was created by God.

(iii) Before an Infinitive the use of *para* implies that the action will be done, whereas *por* bears no such implication:

e.g. *Está para llover.* It is about to rain.
Queda por escribir. It remains to be written.

(iv) With verbs of motion *para* indicates destination, *por* generally denoting distance traversed:

Salgo para Paris. I start for Paris.
Ando por la calle. I go along the street.

4. DISTINGUISH ALSO:

Antes de, before; **después de**, after. *Of Time.*

Delante de, before, in front of; **detrás de**, after, behind. *Of Place.*

Hacia, towards (of direction); used before adverbs indicating direction after verbs of motion. (Examples given below.)

Hasta, up to, as far as (with verbs of motion); until (in speaking of time).

5. SOME IDIOMATIC PHRASES:

Vive por aquí. He lives *about* here.

Leyó la carta para sí. He read the letter *to* himself.

¿**Para qué?** With what object?

¿**Por qué?** Why? (For what cause?)

¡**Pobre de mí!** Poor me!

Ciego de cólera. Blind *with* anger.

Temblar de frío. To tremble *with* the cold.

Caer de rodillas. To fall *on* one's knees.

Servir de guía. To serve *as* a guide.

Estar de pié. To be standing.

Uno a uno. One *by* one.

Estar en casa. To be *at* home.

Ir a casa. To go home.

Viene hacia acá. He is coming here.

¿**Hacia dónde va?** Where (whither) is he going?

¡**Hasta mañana!** Good-bye till to-morrow!

Pensar en. To think *of*.

Consentir en. To consent *to*.

Casarse con . . . To marry

XLV. Conjunctions and Interjections

1. **Y** (and) becomes **e** before words beginning with **i** or **hi**:

e.g. **Padre e hijo.** Father and son.

O (or) becomes **u** before words beginning with **o** or **ho**:

e.g. **Siete u ocho.** Seven or eight.

2. *Pero and Sino*.—*Sino* (but) is used instead of *pero* introducing a direct opposition to a negative statement when no verb follows:

e.g. No me lo ha dado a mí, sino a Vd.
He has given it, not to me, but to you.

If a verb follows, *sino que* is more usual:

No pide perdón, sino que lo merece.
He does not ask for forgiveness, but he deserves it.

Sino is used with *no* to express the idea of "only" (French *ne . . . que*):

e.g. No dice sino la verdad.
He only speaks the truth. (*Il ne dit que la vérité.*)

Pero may be used, like French *mais*, to emphasize what has already been said (cf. Eng. "Why, no!") *Mas* (no accent) is sometimes used for *pero* in literary style.

3. INTERJECTIONS.—Among the commonest words used as interjections are: ¡Chito!, ¡chitón! (silence!), ¡cuidado! (mind, take care!), ¡hombre! (dear me!), ¡ojalá! (would to God!), ¡bravo!, ¡bravísimo! (bravo!), ¡dale! (bother it!), ¡oiga! (listen!), ¡vaya! (now then!), ¡viva! (hurrah!).

Certain phrases are also commonly employed as interjections: ¡Santos cielos!, ¡Jesús! (quite common in Spain), ¡Virgen Santísima!, ¡Válgame Dios!, ¡Dios mío!, and others which need no explanation.

The pure interjections: ¡Ah!, ¡eh!, ¡hola!, etc., are also self-explanatory.

XLVI. Word Order

The order of words in a Spanish sentence is very free, and is determined largely by considerations of euphony. The principal points to remember occur in connection with the *inversion of subject and verb*, a most common device

which can be observed in almost any page of written Spanish, and which has the effect of lending variety or elegance to the sentence thus turned:

e.g. *Nació Cervantes en 1547.*
Dijo su padre que no era verdad.

When this inversion takes place, or in an interrogative sentence:

(a) The object (if a noun) precedes the subject unless it is longer:

e.g. *¿Compró la casa tu padre?*
¿Compró tu padre esta hermosa casa blanca?

(b) The predicative adjective (being considered as part of the verb) precedes the subject:

e.g. *“Está enfermo el Señor Ruiz,” dijo.*

(c) When the subject is a pronoun, it comes before the predicative adjective:

e.g. *¿Está Vd. enfermo?*

XLVII. Suffixes

A large number of terminations can be added to Spanish nouns and adjectives to augment or to diminish the force of their meanings. The correct use of these can only be learned by constant practice, but a list of the principal suffixes is given below.

Both classes of suffix are inflected in the ordinary way. They are added to the word without changing it if it ends in a consonant, otherwise they cause the final vowel to disappear.

Two other changes are sometimes necessitated: (1) If the penultimate syllable contains a diphthong due to the stress upon it, the original vowel is restored when the

stress falls upon the suffix, e.g. **bueno**, **bonachón**, **bonito**.
 (2) **C** becomes **qu**; **g**, **gu**; **z**, **c**; etc., in accordance with the rules of pronunciation which the pupil by this time will have grasped from his studies of verb changes:

e.g. *barca*, a boat; *barquita*, a little boat.

1. *Augmentative Suffixes:*

- ón. Denotes largeness.
- azo. Less common than -ón; sometimes implies awkwardness as well as largeness.
- ote. Usually depreciative.
- acho. } Contemptuous; expresses vulgarity or poorness of quality.
- ajo. }
- azo. } Not augmentative in sense; denotes a blow or a thrust.
- ada. }

2. *Diminutive Suffixes:*

(a) -ito,	-illo,	-uelo.
(b) -cito,	-cillo,	-zuelo.
(c) -ecito,	-ecillo,	-ezuelo.

The (b) forms are added to dissyllables in **-e**, and to dissyllables or polysyllables ending in **-n** or **-r**, especially if they are accented on the final syllable.

The (c) forms are added to monosyllables (with **-c-** prefixed if the monosyllable ends in a vowel), to dissyllables not ending in **-e**, but having **-ie-** or **-ue-** as their radical vowel, or ending in **-ia**, **-ua**, or **-uo**.

In all other cases the (a) forms are used.

-Ito (**-cito**, **-ecito**) is the most common of all diminutives. It expresses smallness of size, together with affection, tenderness, admiration, or respect.

-Ilo (**-cillo**, **-ecillo**) has a depreciatory force; sometimes it expresses pity, at others it has no meaning beyond smallness. Many words in **-illo** have an independent meaning.

-Uelo (**-zuelo**, **-ezuelo**) varies in force between **-illo** and **-ito**.

Other diminutive suffixes are: **-Ete** (**-cete**); **ejo**, de-

preciatory; *-in, -ino*, expressive of affection and small size; *ijo*, expressing smallness, of things without life.

By the combination of suffixes their number is very much increased:

e.g. *-achon* (*-acho + -on*); *-ejuelo* (*-ejo + -uelo*); *-onazo* (*-on + -azo*), etc.

XLVIII. Use of Past Tenses

1. The three past tenses used to express *simple past time* are:

The **Imperfect**, the **Preterite** (Past Definite), the **Past Indefinite** (Perfect).

Which of these tenses is to be used in writing a piece of prose?

2. To relate the main actions¹ of the narrative (if the matter is in narrative form):

(i) The *Preterite* is the most common tense, especially in writings of an historical character.

(ii) The *Past Indefinite* is often used in letters, or when the events have taken place very recently, or when the whole of the narrative is a conversation.

Note.—The Past Indefinite is less used than in French. Frequently we should expect it where we find the preterite, notably in poetry, as an archaism which is considered elegant, and in emphatic phrases like the commonly heard exclamation ¡*Se acabó!* (“It’s all over!” or “It’s all up!”)

(iii) The *Imperfect* is only used when the whole story consists of habitual actions (i.e. of things that “used to occur”).

3. *In the course of the narrative*, or in prose of other than narrative form, the *Imperfect* is used:

(a) Of states of mind, characteristic attributes, and any actions which are taking place at the time that the main

¹By the “main actions” are meant those actions which are not only definite in character, but which mark the successive stages of the story, and help the narrative to advance from beginning to end.

actions occur, or are of secondary importance in the narrative:

e.g. Cuando salí (main action), llovía (secondary action).
Vendió todos los libros que tenía.
El soldado estaba muy cansado, pero se levantó.

(b) Of habitual actions:

e.g. Vió al profesor con quien hablaba francés el año pasado.
He saw the master with whom he spoke French last year (i.e. "used" to speak French).

(c) In reported speech:

e.g. Dijo que todos trabajaban.
He said they were all working.

(d) Of things that occur before the story proper begins:

e.g. Una vez había un pobre zapatero . . . Tenía dos hijos, etc.
There was once a poor shoemaker . . . He had two sons, etc.

4. COMPOUND TENSES:

(i) To express *duration of time*, English uses the past indefinite, pluperfect, and future perfect tenses; Spanish uses the *present*, *imperfect*, and *future*:

e.g. Hace un año que está aquí. He *has been* here for a year.

(ii) The *pluperfect* (i.e. imperfect + past participle) is the tense most commonly used to express past time in the second degree. The *past anterior* (i.e. preterite + past participle) is only used after certain conjunctions, the chief of which are:

Apenas, hardly; así que, as soon as; luego que, after; ya que, seeing that; cuando, when.

Notice the idiomatic phrase:

e.g. Llegado que hubo . . . As soon as he had arrived.

XLIX.—IRREGULAR

Tenses not given are formed regularly (see Sections XXVI, XXVII).

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES.	PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRETERITE.
Andar , <i>go, walk.</i> Andando. Andado.	ando, -as, -a. andamos, -áis, -an.	anduve, -iste, -o. anduvimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Asir , <i>grasp, seize.</i> Asiendo. Asido.	asgo , ases, ase. asimos, asis, asen.	así, asiste, asió. asimos, asisteis, asieron.
Caber , ¹ <i>be contained.</i> Cabiendo. Cabido.	quepo , cabes, cabe. cabemos, -éis, -en.	cupe, cupiste, cupo. cupimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Caer , ² <i>fall, happen.</i> Cayendo. Caído.	caigo , caes, cae. caemos, -éis, -en.	caí, caíste, cayó. caímos, caísteis, cayeron.
Concernir , <i>concern.</i> (Impersonal.)	conciérne. conciernen.	concernió. concernieron.
Conducir , ³ <i>lead, guide.</i>	conduzco, conduces, -e. conducimos, -ís, -en.	conduje, -iste, -o. condujimos, -isteis, condujeron.
Dar , ⁴ <i>give.</i> Dando. Dado.	doy, das, da. damos, dais, dan.	dí, diste, dió. dimos, disteis, dieron.
Decir , ⁵ <i>say.</i> Diciendo. Dicho.	digo, dices, dice. decimos, decís, dicen.	dije, dijiste, dijo. dijimos, -isteis, dijeron.
Estar , ⁶ <i>be.</i> Estando. Estado.	estoy, -ás, -á. estamos, -áis, -an.	estuve, -iste, -o. estuvimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Haber , ⁷ <i>have.</i> Habiendo. Habido.	he, has, ha. hemos, habéis, han.	hube, -iste, -o. hubimos, -isteis, -ieron.

¹ No quepo aquí. There is no room for me here.

Todos los libros cabían en el cuarto. All the books were got into the room.

No cabe más. There is nothing more to be desired.

No haber en sí. To be very conceited.

² El traje le cae mal. The suit fits him badly.

Las ventanas caen al jardín. The windows overlook the garden.

Caer enfermo, become ill. For the "y" see Section XXXVIII. So **raer**, to erase, a little-used verb with the additional present subjunctive **raya**, etc.

³ So all compounds of **ducir**, which verb does not itself exist in Spanish:

e.g. **inducir**, **reducir**, etc.

VERBS

All Irregularities are marked in heavy type.

FUTURE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
andaré, etc.	ande, etc.	anda, ande. andemos, andad, anden.
asiré, etc.	asga , etc.	ase, asga . asgamos , asid, asgan .
cabré , etc.	quepa , etc.	cabe, quepa . quepamos , cabed, quepan .
caeré, etc.	caiga , etc.	cae, caiga . caigamos , caed, caigan .
concernirá. concernirán.	concierna. conciernan.	
conduciré, etc.	conduzca, etc.	conduce, conduzca . conduzcamos , conducid, conduzcan .
daré, etc.	dé, etc.	da, dé . demos, dad, den.
diré, etc.	diga , etc.	dí , diga . digamos , decid, digan .
estaré, etc.	esté, etc.	está, esté . estemos, estad, estén .
habré , etc.	haya , etc.	(hé), haya . hayamos , habed, hayan .

⁴ Dar el sí, consent; dar un paseo, take a walk.

Las ventanas dan al jardín. The windows overlook the garden.

Dar los buenos días, to wish good day; darse las manos, shake hands.

⁵ Bendecir (bless), and maldecir (curse), are conjugated like decir, except in the future (bendeciré, etc.), imperative singular (bendice), and past participle (bendecido). Contradecir (contradict), desdecir (gainsay), and predecir (predict), follow bendecir in the imperative singular, but elsewhere follow decir.

⁶ See Section XXIX.

⁷ See Sections XXIII, XXVIII.

IRREGULAR

Tenses not given are formed regularly (see Sections XXVI, XXVII).

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES.	PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRETERITE.
Hacer , ⁸ <i>do, make.</i> Haciendo. Hecho.	hago, haces, hace. hacemos, -éis, -en.	hice, hiciste, hizo. hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron.
Ir , ⁹ <i>go.</i> Yendo. Ido.	voy, vas, va. vamos, vais, van.	fuí, fuiste, fué. fuimos, fuisteis, fueron.
Oír , ¹⁰ <i>hear.</i> Oyendo. Oído.	oigo, oyes, oye. oímos, oís, oyen.	oí, oíste, oyó. oímos, oísteis, oyeron.
Placer , ¹¹ <i>please.</i> (Impersonal.) Placiendo.	place.	plugo or plació.
Poder , ¹² <i>be able.</i> Pudiendo. Podido.	puedo, -es, -e. podemos, podéis, pueden.	pude, -iste, -o. pudimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Poner , ¹³ <i>place.</i> Poniendo. Puesto.	pongo, pones, pone. ponemos, ponéis, ponen.	puse, -iste, -o. pusimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Querer , ¹⁴ <i>wish, want.</i> Queriendo. Querido.	quiero, -es, -e. queremos, -éis, quieren.	quise, -iste, -o. quisimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Roer , <i>gnaw.</i>	roigo (royo), roes, roe. roemos, -éis, -en.	—
Saber , ¹⁵ <i>know.</i> Sabiendo. Sabido.	sé, sabes, sabe. sabemos, -éis, -en.	supé, -iste, -o. supimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Ser , ¹⁶ <i>be.</i> Siendo. Sido.	soy, eres, es. somos, sois, son.	fuí, fuiste, fué. fuimos, fuisteis, fueron.

⁸ See Section XXIII: **hacer + con (or de)**, provide (with).

Also: **hacer caso de**, mind (= worry about).

Haré por verle. I shall try to see him.

Hago construir una casa. I am having a house built.

Hacer pedazos, tear to pieces.

Hágame Vd. el favor de . . . Please be kind enough to . . .

⁹ *Imperfect Indicative*: **Iba, ibas, iba, ibamos, ibais, iban.**

Va a llover, it is going to rain; **vamos a ver**, let us see.

¹⁰ **¡Oye!** Listen! I say! **¡Oye, oye!** Hear, hear!

VERBS—*Cont.*

All Irregularities are marked in heavy type.

FUTURE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
haré, etc.	haga , etc.	haz , haga . hagamos , haced , hagan .
iré, etc.	vaya , etc.	vé , vaya . vamos , id , vayan .
oiré, etc.	oiga , etc.	oye , oiga . oigamos , oíd , oigan .
placerá.	plega , plegue , or plazca .	—
podré, etc	pueda , etc.	—
pondré, etc.	ponga , etc.	pon , ponga . pongamos , poned , pongan .
querré, etc.	quiera , etc.	quiere , quiera . queramos , quered , quieran .
—	roa , etc.; roiga , etc., or roya , etc.	
sabré, etc.	sepa , etc.	sabe , sepa . sepamos , sabed , sepan .
seré, etc.	sea , etc.	sé , sea . seamos , sed , sean .

¹¹ Used mainly as an impersonal verb. Note the expression ¡**Plugulera a Dios!** Would to God!

¹² **No puedo más.** I can't do any more. (**Je n'en peux plus.**)

Puede que . . . It may be that . . .

No puedo menos de ir. I can't help going.

¹³ **Poner la mesa**, set the table; **el sol se pone**, the sun is setting;
ponérsele a un hombre, to take a fancy to a man.

¹⁴ ¿**Qué quiere decir esta palabra?** What does this word mean?

¹⁵ **Hacer saber**, make known; **sabe cantar**, he can sing; **a saber**, namely, to wit,

¹⁶ See Section XXIX.

IRREGULAR

Tenses not given are formed regularly (see Sections XXVI, XXVII).

INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES.	PRESENT INDICATIVE.	PRETERITE.
Soler , ¹⁷ <i>be wont to.</i>	suelo , -es, -e. solemos, -éis, suelen .	—
Tener , ¹⁸ <i>have.</i> Teniendo. Tenido.	tengo, tienes, tiene. tenemos, -éis, tienen .	tuve , -iste, -o. tuvimos , -isteis, -ieron.
Traer , ¹⁹ <i>draw, carry.</i> Trayendo. Traído.	traigo , traes, trae. traemos, -éis, -en.	traje , -iste, -o. trajimos , -isteis, -trajeron.
Valer , ²⁰ <i>be worth.</i> Valiendo. Valido.	valgo , vales, vale. valemós, -éis, -en.	valí, valiste, valió. valimos, -isteis, -ieron.
Venir , ²¹ <i>come.</i> Viniendo. Venido.	vengo, vienes, viene. venimos, venís, vienen .	vine , viniste, vino. vinimos , -isteis, -ieron.
Ver , ²² <i>see.</i> Viendo. Visto.	veo , ves, ve. vemos, veis, ven.	ví, viste, vió. vimos, visteis, vieron.
Yacer , <i>lie.</i> Yaciendo. Yacido.	yazco (yazgo, yago) , yaces, yace. yacemos, -éis, -en.	yací, -iste, -ió. yacimos, -isteis, -ieron.

¹⁷ A defective verb, found only in the present indicative and in the imperfect *solía*.

¹⁸ See Section XXVIII.

¹⁹ Note the "y" (Section XXXVIII) of the present participle.

²⁰ **No vale la pena.** It is not worth while. **Más vale**, it is better.

Más vale tarde que nunca. Better late than never.

So *salir*, to go out, with "i" for "e" in the forms where -ER verbs and -IR verbs differ. Imperative singular *sal*.

²¹ **Venga lo que viniere**, come what will; **vengo en ello**, I agree to that.

²² **Ya se ve**, it is evident; **hacer ver**, to show.

Imperfect Indicative: Veía, veías, veía, veíamos, veíais, veían.

VERBS—*Cont.**All Irregularities are marked in heavy type.*

FUTURE.	PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.	IMPERATIVE.
_____	_____	_____
tendré, etc.	tenga, etc.	ten, tenga. tengamos, tened, tengan.
traeré, etc.	traiga, etc.	trae, traiga. traigamos, traed, traigan.
valdré, etc.	valga, etc.	val (vale), valga. valgamos, valed, valgan.
vendré, etc.	venga, etc.	ven, venga. vengamos, venid, vengán.
veré, etc.	vea, etc.	ve, vea. veamos, ved, vean.
yaceré, etc.	yazca, etc.; yazga, etc., or yaga, etc.	yace or yaz.

A.—**Atañer**, to attain, is hardly ever used except in the third persons of the Present Indicative: **atañe, atañen**.

B.—Remember that **poder** stands both for “can” and for “may”. Note the following phrases:—

He could: **podía, pudo** (= he *was* able).

He could: **podría** (= he *might* be able).

Habría podido ir. He would have been able to go, or He might have gone. (Cf. French: *il aurait pu aller.*)

APPENDIX

I

Exceptions to Gender Rules

No attempt is made to give an exhaustive list of these exceptions. They are, comparatively speaking, so rare that the student can easily learn them as they occur in his reading. The following examples are intended to familiarize him with the commonest of them, as in the early stages of his work, where he will meet with many of these words, he may be apt to overlook them.

Gender by Meaning.—**Mar** (sea) has both genders; it is masculine only when used in a general sense, feminine when it denotes a particular piece of water. Of winds, **la brisa** (the breeze) and **la tramontana** (the north wind) are the only exceptions.

Gender by Termination:

Masculines in -a, -d, -z.

el día , the day.	el guía , the guide.
el sur , } the south.	el tranvía , the tramway.
el sud , }	el tema , ¹ the exercise.
el juez , the judge.	el papa , ¹ the pope.
el mapa , the map.	el guardia , ¹ the guard.
el lápiz , the pencil.	el pez , ¹ the fish (la pez , the pitch).
el cura , ¹ the curate, priest.	

Also most nouns in stressed *a*, and those from Greek nouns in *-ma*.

¹ The other gender is also found (with a different meaning).

Feminines in -e.

el (for la) ave, the bird.	la llave, the key.
la calle, the street.	la muerte, death.
la carne, the flesh.	la nieve, the snow.
la clase, the class.	la noche, the night.
la costumbre, the custom.	la sangre, the blood.
la especie, the kind.	la tarde, the evening.
la fe, the faith.	la torre, the tower.
la frase, the phrase.	la corte, ¹ the court.
la gente, the people.	la frente, ¹ the forehead.
el (for la) hambre, hunger.	la parte, ¹ the part.
la leche, the milk.	

Other Irregular Feminines

la cal, the chalk.	la razón, the reason.
la col, the cabbage.	la mano, the hand.
la miel, the honey.	la flor, the flower.
la sal, the salt.	la labor, labour.
la señal, the mark.	la grey, the flock.
la capital, the chief town.	la ley, the law.
la vocal, the vowel.	

¹The other gender is also found (with a different meaning).

II

Examples of Verbs with Irregularities in Root-Vowel (See Section XXXVI.)

1. *Paradigms.*—(Only those tenses are conjugated in which irregularities occur):

CLASS I.

[Verbs of First and Second Conjugation.]

Mostrar, to show.

Present Indicative.

muestro.	mostramos.
muestras.	mostráis.
muestra.	muestran

Present Subjunctive.

muestre.	mostremos.
muestres.	mostréis.
muestre.	muestren.

Imperative.

muestra.	mostrad.
muestre Vd.	muestren Vds.
mostremos.	

Similarly *perder* (to lose), *pierdo*, *pierdes*, *pierde*, *perdemos*, *perdéis*, *pierden*, etc.

CLASS II.

[Verbs of Third Conjugation.]

Sentir, to feel.

Pres. Part.: sintiendo. *Past Part.:* sentido.

Present Indicative.

siento.	sentimos.
sientes.	sentís.
siente.	sienten.

Imperative.

	sintamos.
siente.	sentid.
sienta Vd.	sientan Vds.

Present Subjunctive.

sienta.	sintamos.
sientas.	sintáis.
sienta.	sientan.

Preterite.

sentí.	sentimos.
sentiste.	sentisteis.
sintió.	sintieron.

Subjunctive—Compound Tenses.

Imperfect: sintiese, etc. *Future:* sintiere, etc.

Conditional: sintiera, etc.

Similarly dormir (to sleep), with change of *o* to *ue* and to *u*.

CLASS III

[Verbs of Third Conjugation.]

Pedir, to ask.

Pres. Part.: pidiendo. *Past Part.:* pedido.

Present Indicative.

pido.	pedimos.
pides.	pedís.
pide.	piden.

Imperative.

	pidamos.
pide.	pedid.
pida Vd.	pidan Vds.

Present Subjunctive.

pida.	pidamos.
pidas.	pidáis.
pida.	pidan.

Preterite.

pedí.	pedimos.
pediste.	pedisteis.
pidió.	pidieron.

Subjunctive—Compound Tenses.

Imperfect: Pidiese, etc. *Future:* Pidiere, etc.

Conditional: Pidiera, etc.

2. EXAMPLES.—(Compounds are not generally given. They should be added by the student as he finds them.)

CLASS I

acertar, hit the mark.
 acordar, remind.
 acostar, lay down.
 adquirir, acquire.
 almorzar, breakfast.
 atender, attend.
 calentar, warm.
 cerrar, close.
 cocer, boil, bake.
 comenzar, begin.
 preocupar, concern.
 contar, count, relate.
 contender, contend.
 costar, cost.
 defender, defend.
 descender, descend.
 despertar, awaken.
 discernir, discern.
 doler, pain, grieve.
 empezar, begin.
 encender, kindle.
 encontrar, meet.
 errar, wander.
 esforzar, strengthen.

helar, freeze.
 inquirir, enquire.
 jugar, play.
 llover, rain.
 moblar, furnish.
 morder, bite.
 mostrar, show.
 mover, move.
 negar, deny.
 nevar, snow.
 pensar, think.
 perder, lose, destroy.
 probar, prove, try.
 rogar, entreat.
 sentar, seat.
 sonar, sound.
 soñar, dream.
 temblar, tremble.
 tender, stretch.
 tentar, try.
 travesar, cross.
 tronar, thunder.
 volar, fly.
 volver, return.

III

Forms of Address

1. *Spoken*.—A gentleman is addressed as **Señor**, a lady as **Señora** (Mrs.) or **Señorita** (Miss). They may also be called (e.g.) **Señor Torres**, **Señora Torres**. In this case they are *referred to* as **el Señor Torres**, **la Señora Torres**.

Before the Christian name **Don**, **Doña** may be used either with or without **Señor**, **Señora**. Thus: **Don Alejandro**, **Señora Doña María**, **Señor Don Arturo Ruiz**. Before **Don**, **Doña** the article is never found.

Señor is prefixed to a title, such as “general”, “capitán”, “cura”. The person is thus addressed as **Señor General X**—, and referred to as **El Señor General X**—.

A Spanish gentleman's full title bears his mother's surname added to his father's and connected with it by “y”. Thus: **Señor Don José Gómez y Ferrera**.

2. *In Letters*.—The following are among the commonest opening phrases:

To persons of equal standing:

Muy señor mío: Muy estimado señor mío:

Muy señor mío y amigo: (more familiar).

Estimado Señor Perez:

Estimado Don Juan:

To friends:

Querido amigo: Mi buen amigo:

In business:

Muy señor mío (nuestro), muy señora mía (nuestra), muy señores míos (nuestros).

Excelentísimo señor (to a much superior person).

Among the commonest concluding phrases are:
To persons of equal standing:

Quedo de Vd. atento y seguro servidor (att^o y S.S.).
Créame Vd. su más att^o y S.S.
Soy de Vd. su muy buen amigo y S.S. (more familiar).

To friends:

Su servidor y amigo. Siempre de Vd. S.S. y amigo.

In business and formal letters the initials Q.B.S.M. (que besa sus manos) are often added—to a lady Q.B.S.P. (que besa sus pies). In both formal and friendly letters we also find Q.E.S.M. (que estrecha su mano), with its variant Q.L.E.L.M. (que le estrecha la mano).

Thus:

Su atento servidor. Q.B.S.M.
Quedamos de Vd. atentos y S.S. Q.B.S.M.
Quedo suyo afmo. (afectísimo) y S.S.
De Vd. atento y S.S.

Letters of a formal character frequently open thus:

Tengo el gusto de remitir. I have pleasure in remitting.

Acabo de recibir . . . I have just received . . .

En contestación a . . . } In reply to . . .
Contestando a . . . }

Tenemos el honor de informarle . . . We have the honour
to inform you . . .

3. The following *common abbreviations* among others are found in Spanish:

Afectísimo.	Afmo.	Por orden.	P.O.
Don.	D. or Dn.	Señor.	Sr.
Doña.	Da.	Señora.	Sra.
Excelencia.	Exca.	Señorita.	Srta.
Besa la (su) mano.	{ B.L.M.	General.	Gral.
Su mano besa.	{ B.S.M.; S.M.b.	Ilustrísima.	Ilma.
Su Majestad.	S.M.	Corriente.	Corrte.
Su Seguro Servidor.	S.S.S.	Cuenta.	Cta.
Usted (-es). V. or Vd. (V.V. or Vds.).		Posdata.	P.D.

EXERCISES

NOTE ON THE USE OF THE EXERCISES

The Exercises can be used in conjunction with the Grammar to form a "Course" or as "occasional" exercises; a glance at the following *Scheme of Lessons* will make it clear on which of the rules the exercises are severally based.

Teachers who follow the Direct Method will, it is hoped, find the sections marked "Conversation" and "Reading" both useful and suggestive; others, no doubt, will find them suitable for translation, or for translation combined with oral work in class.

The English-Spanish Exercises consist mainly of sentences based on grammatical rules as they occur in the various lessons. The Exercises in Spanish, however, contain a large proportion of reading matter. Indeed, from Lesson IX, a short passage for reading is included in every lesson, the remainder of the lesson consisting of questions based partly upon this and partly upon the portion of grammar learned with that lesson. These questions will of course be supplemented by the teacher. In all language study, and especially in the case of Spanish, it is well to begin reading at as early a stage as possible, and as Lesson IX represents roughly the end of the first or second term's work (according as the book is to occupy one or two years), reading matter is provided for those who do not care to introduce a connected reader until after the first year.

Round brackets () denote that the words enclosed are to be translated in Spanish, though they are not expressed in English.

Square brackets [] denote that the words enclosed are to be omitted in Spanish.

A SCHEME OF LESSONS

[Preliminary—Study Introductory Chapter and read Sections i-iii]

Lesson	Subject.	Sections in Grammar.
1. (a)	Nouns, Articles - - - - -	vi, iv (1-3).
(b)	Subject-pronouns. Adjectives: gender and number - - - - -	} xv, viii (1-2).
2. (a)	<i>Tener</i> and <i>Haber</i> —present indicative, and uses of - - - - -		} xxviii, xxx, and xxxi (parts).
(b)	Possessive adjectives and pronouns, -AR verbs, present indicative and participles - - - - -	} ix, 1; xviii, 1; xxxiv (part).
3. (a)	<i>Estar</i> and <i>Ser</i> —present indicative, and uses of - - - - -		} xxxii and xxxiii (parts); xxix.
(b)	Comparison of adjectives, demonstra- tive adjectives and pronouns - - -	} xi; ix, 2; xviii, 2.
4. (a)	Interrogative adjectives and pronouns, -ER verbs, present indicative and participles - - - - -		} xix, 2; xxxv (part).
(b)	Personal <i>a</i> - - - - -	} vii.
5. (a)	Conjunctive object-pronouns, reflexive pronouns - - - - -		} xvi, 1; xvii; xx, 1.
(b)	Read sections xxv, xxvi. ¹ Learn section xxvii.	
6. (a)	Future, conditional, and imperative of verbs in sections - - - - -	} xxx-xxxv (parts).
	Numerals - - - - -		} xxi.
(b)	Adjectives—finish. Dates, ages - - -	} viii, 3-4; ix, 3; xxiv.
7. (a)	Adverbs and their comparison - - -		} x; xii.
(b)	Disjunctive pronouns; indefinite adjec- tives and pronouns - - - - -	} xiii; xvi, 2.
8. (a)	Preterite and imperfect indicative of verbs in sections - - - - -		} xxx-xxxv (parts).
(b)	Use of past tenses - - - - -	} xlvi.

¹ The various parts of this section should be learnt as each tense dealt with in it is studied.

Lesson	Subject.	Sections in Grammar
9.	(a) Recapitulation of lessons 1-8, especially of the verb and pronoun.	
10.	(a) Relative pronouns - - - -	xix, 1.
	(b) "Lo"—Use and omission of the article	iv, 4; v.
11.	(a) Present subjunctive of verbs in sections	xxx-xxxv.
	(b) Time - - - - -	xxii.
12.	(a) Root-changing verbs—Class i - -	xxxvi, 1.
	(b) Negation: negative pronouns and ad-verbs - - - - -	xiv.
13.	(a) Root-changing verbs—Class ii - -	xxxvi, 2.
	(b) Passive voice—certain reflexive verbs -	xx, 2-3.
14.	(a) Root-changing verbs—Class iii - -	xxxvi, 3.
	(b) Weather - - - - -	xxiii.
15.	(a) Recapitulation of root-changing verbs.	
	(b) Participles - - - - -	xl.
16.	(a) Verbs irregular in consonant - -	xxxvii.
	(b) Prepositions - - - - -	xliv, 1-3.
17.	(a) Recapitulation of lessons 10-16, especially of verbs.	
18.	(a) Subjunctive tenses—other than present—of verbs in sections - - - -	xxx-xxxv (parts).
	(b) Conditional sentences - - - - -	xlili.
19.	(a) Irregular verbs: <i>dar, decir, ir, saber</i> -	xliv.
	(b) Use of subjunctive - - - - -	xli.
20.	(a) Irregular verbs: <i>hacer, ver, andar</i> -	xliv.
	(b) Use of subjunctive (continued) - -	xliv, 3.
21.	(a) Irregular verbs: <i>poder, roer, soler</i> -	xliv.
	(b) Use of subjunctive (continued) - -	xliv, 4.
22.	(a) Irregular verbs: <i>poner, valer (salir), venir</i> - - - - -	xliv.
	(b) The infinitive - - - - -	xxxix.
23.	(a) Irregular verbs: <i>querer, concernir, caber</i> - - - - -	xliv.
	(b) Prepositions (continued) - - - -	xliv, 4-5.
24.	(a) Irregular verbs: <i>asir, conducir, yacer</i>	xliv.
	(b) Conjunctions - - - - -	xliv.
25.	(a) Irregular verbs: <i>oir, placer</i> - -	xliv.
	(b) Word order - - - - -	xlvi.
26.	(a) Contracted verbs - - - - -	xxxviii.
	(b) Suffixes - - - - -	xlvii.
27.	(a) Recapitulation of lessons 18-26, especially of irregular verbs.	

Lesson I

CONVERSATION :

(a) el lápiz.	la pluma.	uno.	blanco.
el libro.	la tinta.	dos.	negro.
el tintero.	la mesa.	tres.	rojo.
el sillón.	la pizarra.	cuatro.	amarillo.
el papel.	la ventana.	cinco.	

un libro, dos libros; un lápiz, dos lápices; una pluma, dos plumas.

- ¿Cómo se llama esto? } Esto es un libro—papel—una pizarra—tinta.
 ¿Qué es esto? }
 ¿Cuántos libros? Dos libros. ¿Cuántas plumas? Tres plumas.
 ¿Se llama esto un sillón? Sí, señor(a), esto se llama un sillón.
 ¿Se llama esto un lápiz? No, señor(a), esto no se llama un lápiz, esto es una pluma.

- (b) ¿De qué color es el lápiz? El lápiz es negro. Es negro.
 ¿De qué color es la tinta? La tinta es negra. Es negra.
 ¿De qué color son los libros? Los libros son rojos. Son rojos.
 ¿De qué color son las plumas? Las plumas son rojas. Son rojas.

- ¿Es blanco este papel? Sí, señor(a), este papel es blanco.
 ¿Es amarillo este libro? No, señor(a), este libro no es amarillo; es negro.

El profesor.	español.	Juan.
El discípulo.	francés.	Carlos.
La discípula.	inglés.	Juanita.
La clase.	alemán.	María.

Yo soy profesor. Vd. es discípulo. Vds. son discípulos.

- ¿Soy yo profesor? Sí, señor, Vd. es profesor de español.
 ¿Es Vd. discípulo? Sí, señor, yo soy discípulo.
 ¿Son Vds. profesores? No, señor, (nosotros) no somos profesores; somos discípulos.
 ¿Es Juan profesor? No, señor, no es profesor; es discípulo.

Yo soy inglés. Vds. son ingleses. Juan no es francés; María no es francesa. Juanita y María no son francesas; son inglesas.

- ¿Somos alemanes? No, señor; no somos alemanes, somos ingleses.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. The pencil and the pen; the book and the paper; the ink-pot and the ink. 2. The pencils and the pens; the books and the papers; the ink-pots and the ink. 3. This is called (*esto se llama*) a blackboard. 4. This is called a window. 5. The books are (*están*) on (*sobre*) the table. 6. The table is (*está*) in front of (*delante de*) the wall. 7. The boys are in the class; the master is in front of the class. 8. This is called a picture—a chair—a curtain. 9. What (*Cómo*) is this called? A curtain. 10. The curtains are in front of the window.

(b) 1. I am (*estoy*) in the room—near the fire—behind the curtains. 2. The blotting-paper is (*está*) on the floor—on the desk—under the table. 3. You are (*Vd.¹ está*) in (the) school—in the playground—in the town. 4. A black hat, black hats; a white collar, white collars; a small handkerchief, small handkerchiefs. 5. My brother's umbrella (= the umbrella of my brother); my friend's suit; my father's overcoat. 6. The master's frock-coat; the boy's slippers, the boys' slippers. 7. The white ties; the red tie; the blue ties. 8. My white waistcoat is on the bed; the shoes are behind the door. 9. The English boy; the English boys; the English girls. 10. The French girl; the Spanish children; the German prisoners. 11. I am here, but you are in my friend's house; he is not in (the) class to-day. 12. We have (*tenemos*) an umbrella, but you have (*Vds. tienen*) a green sunshade.

¹ The student should always translate "you" by *Vd.* (*pl. Vds.*) unless specially instructed not to do so.

Lesson II

CONVERSATION:

(a) Tengo mi pluma en la mano. Vd. tiene su pluma en la mano. Tenemos nuestros libros (nuestras plumas) en las manos. Vds. tienen sus libros. ¿Cuántas ventanas tenemos en este cuarto? ¿Cuántos libros tengo en la mano derecha (izquierda)? sobre la mesa? ¿Tiene Vd. tinta roja, Carlos?—No, señor, no tengo tinta roja, tengo tinta negra. ¿Tienen Vds. aquí sus libros franceses?—No, señor, aquí tenemos nuestros libros españoles. El papel del profesor, del muchacho, de la señora. Las casas de los profesores, de las señoras. ¿Quién tiene mi libro?—Yo tengo su libro. ¿Es éste su libro (de Vd.)?—No, señor, no es mi libro; es su libro de Vd. El papel del discípulo, de Juan. ¿Qué es esto?—Es el papel de Juan. No es mi papel; no es su papel de Vd. ¿Es éste el papel de Juan?—Sí, señor, es su papel (de él).

(b) Yo doy mi libro al discípulo, a Carlos. Ahora no es mi libro, es el libro de Carlos, es su libro. Este libro es el suyo. Tengo en la mano el libro de Juan. ¿Quién tiene el mío?—Doy a Vd. mi libro—ahora es el suyo (el de Vd.). Este cuarto es el nuestro; estos libros son los suyos (los de Vds.). Los libros alemanes son los míos. ¿Juan, son estos libros los de Carlos?—No, señor, no son los suyos, son los de Vd.

Yo hablo español. Vd. habla inglés. ¿Hablamos siempre español en la clase?—Sí, señor, en la clase de español, pero no en la de francés. ¿Hablan Vds. francés en casa?—No, señor, hablamos inglés. Yo enseño, Vds. escuchan. ¿Escucha Vd. siempre, Juan?—No, señor, yo no escucho siempre, pero Carlos escucha y adelanta mucho. Estudiamos nuestras lecciones en la escuela y en casa. ¿Qué estudia Vd., Carlos?—Estudio el español. ¿Qué enseño yo?—Vd. enseña el español. ¿Qué hablamos?—Hablamos español (*el* castellano). El español no es difícil; es fácil.

¿Cómo se llama en español (en inglés, en alemán), esta palabra? ¿Cómo se llama esto? ¿Cómo se llama Vd.? ¿Cómo se llaman estos libros?—Son los del profesor X—; son libros españoles.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. I have a garden; the garden has many beautiful flowers. 2. The trees have leaves, but they have not [any] flowers. 3. Yes, they have small green flowers. 4. We have some red roses and white hyacinths. 5. You have a bunch of daisies, haven't you (*¿no es verdad?*)? 6. I have had (*tenido*) two letters and a parcel to-day. 7. He has had a post card and several letters. 8. We have not had the letters yet; the postman has not come (*venido*). 9. I have a letter for my brother and a post card for my sister. 10. Have you the blotting-paper? No, it isn't (*no está*) here.

(b) 1. We speak English and French; do you speak Spanish? 2. We work before (*antes de*) breakfast¹; I also work after dinner, but John works between breakfast and dinner. 3. The pupils listen; the master talks; the industrious boys work. 4. The idle boys never study—they draw on the desk or in their books. 5. I have taken the exercises to your room, sir. Have you taken your book too? No, sir, I have it in my hand. 6. Are (*son*) the apples yours? Yes, but they are (*están*) not ripe. 7. I have planted two trees in our garden to-day; we have now planted six apple-trees and a cherry-tree. 8. These oranges are not mine; I have given one orange to John—it is his. I have given the second orange to Mary—it is hers. 9. We have mended our clothes; our new dresses have not yet arrived. 10. The letters are ours, not his. I give my brother all my stamps; my brother often sends the stamps to his friends.

¹ Say: *the* breakfast, etc.

Lesson III

CONVERSATION:

(a) El profesor está de pie; Juan está sentado; Juan y Carlos están sentados. Yo estoy de pie. Vd. está sentado. Vds. están sentados. ¿Dónde estoy yo?—Vd. está en este cuarto. ¿Dónde estamos?—Estamos todos en el cuarto. ¿Dónde está el sillón?—Está detrás de la mesa. ¿Dónde están los libros?—Están sobre la mesa. Yo estoy delante de la clase. Los lápices están dentro de la caja.

Yo soy inglés; Carlos es francés; Vds. son ingleses. Somos ingleses. ¿Soy yo profesor?—Sí, señor, Vd. es profesor de español. La caja es de madera; la ventana es de vidrio; mi reloj es de oro; estos relojes son de plata.

Yo soy viejo; mi padre y mi madre son viejos; mis hijos y mis hijas son jóvenes; Vds. son jóvenes. Hoy estoy enfermo (no estoy bueno); estoy cansado. ¿Están Vds. enfermos?—No, señor; nosotros no estamos enfermos, pero Juanita está enferma; no está aquí. Juan es perezoso; Juanita es amable pero hoy está triste, porque está mala.

(b) Aquí hay tres cuadros; este cuadro es pequeño; ese cuadro es grande; aquel cuadro es más grande que éste. Estos libros son rojos; esos son verdes; aquellos son azules. Esta ventana está abierta; esas ventanas están cerradas. Este muchacho es alto; ese muchacho es más alto; Juan es el más alto de la clase (de todos). Este cuadro es más hermoso que éste. ¿Qué es esto? ¿Eso? ¿Aquello? ¿Cuántos años tiene Vd.?—Tengo quince años. Pedro tiene trece años. Vd. es mayor que Pedro; Pedro es menor que Vd. ¿Habla Vd. mucho?—Sí, señor, pero Juan habla más; yo no soy hábil; yo hablo menos español que él. El ejercicio de María es mejor que el de Pedro.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. The master is very strict when the boys are not attentive. 2. I am tired and ill to-day; I am not idle. 3. He is not English; he is studying in order to (*para*) learn English. 4. Are you French or Spanish? You don't speak like an Englishman. 5. The apples are green; they are not ripe yet. 6. These flowers are very pretty; they are red and white. 7. Is the water warm? No, it is almost cold. 8. I think (that) we are ready now. You are very tiresome, Paul; you always come late. 9. Is it you, Peter? Yes. Where are the books? They are in the garden. 10. It is a pity (that) he is (*está*) so ill; he is quite young, and his mother is always very sad.

(b) 1. Here is the map. There are three roads; that road is the longest, but this is the broadest and the best. 2. This hill is higher than that, isn't it? (*¿no es verdad?*) 3. It is a long river; (the) American rivers are longer than (the) Spanish ones. 4. Here is another map; it is larger than this [one]. Here is a small map; it is smaller than yours. 5. This pencil is mine, that little blue pencil is his; perhaps that [one] on the window-ledge is yours. 6. No, that is a blue pencil too; mine is red. 7. What is the name of that mountain? It is the highest mountain in (*de*) the country. 8. We are studying this book; it is more difficult than that [one], but very interesting. 9. It is a very useful book; is it really more difficult than the other? 10. John is older than Paul; he is cleverer than his brothers, but generally he is less industrious.

Lesson IV

CONVERSATION:

(a) Juan aprende su lección. ¿Qué hace Vd., Juan?—Aprendo mi lección.—Muy bien. ¿Aprenden Vds. sus lecciones?—No, señor, leemos las revistas. ¿Qué lee Vd., Pedro?—Leo el “Nuevo Mundo” (un periódico). ¿Comprenden Vds. esta frase?—Sí, señor, la comprendemos bien. ¿Qué escriben Vds. en sus libros?—Escribimos las palabras que no comprendemos. ¿Viven Vds. en esta ciudad?—No, señor, vivimos en el campo. ¿Vive Vd. en el campo, Juan?—No, señor, yo vivo en Londres, pero María vive en el campo.

¿Quién está a la puerta? ¿Qué hay delante de la ventana? ¿Dónde están las cortinas? ¿Cuántos lápices tiene Vd.? ¿Cuántas hermanas tiene Vd.?—No comprendo lo que dice. ¿Qué quiere Vd. decir?

¿De quién es este papel secante?—Es mío. ¿A quién habla Vd., Carlos?—A Pedro. ¿De qué?—De mi lección. ¿Cuáles de estos libros quiere Vd.? ¿Cuál de estas frases no comprende Vd.?

(b) ¿Dónde está Pablo?—No está aquí. ¿Qué hace Vd., señor?—Busco a Pablo. ¿Dónde está su libro, María?—No sé, señor. Busco mi libro. ¿A quién busca Vd.?—A Pablo. ¿Qué busca Vd.?—Busco el libro que he comprado. He hallado mi libro. No he hallado a Pablo. ¿Ha visitado Vd. a Londres? ¿A París? ¿A Madrid? ¿Qué hace Vd., María? Pido una pluma a Juan, porque he perdido la mía. Llamo a Juan. ¿A quién llamo?—Vd. llama a Juan. ¿Ha contestado Vd. a la carta de su padre?—Sí, señor, he enviado a mi padre una postal.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. What are you writing—an exercise or a letter? 2. I am learning Spanish (*el castellano*) and I study a great deal in order to read well. 3. He is drinking coffee and eating sandwiches. We drink tea or cocoa. 4. They sell eggs, but these eggs are not large enough. 5. We want to buy some pears; are these pears ripe? No, those are riper than these; these pears are quite green. 6. I have taken a cheap book. Which of these books is the cheaper? This one, sir. But that one is not large enough. 7. Who is there? It is I. Who is it? It is Paul. 8. Whose overcoat is that? Mine, sir. 9. Whom have I given my book to? You have given the book to me; I have lent mine to John, because his is not here. 10. Where do you live? I live in this town. Why do you live in the town? Because my father and mother do not like the country.

(b) 1. Who lives in London? How many streets are there in London? I do not know (*no sé*); there are a great many. 2. Have you visited Liverpool? No, but I have visited many other English towns. 3. Whom are you looking for? I am looking for a professor who speaks (*hable*) Spanish fluently. 4. The King has called his Prime Minister because he fears a revolution. 5. What have you found in the garden? I have found two rabbits which belong to my little brother. 6. What are you talking about? I am asking (*pido*) Paul for [some] blotting-paper. 7. Does the boy love his mother? Yes, he is a good boy, but very lazy: he does not love his books. 8. There is a dining-room in the house, is there not? Yes, but there is no drawing-room, and a very small kitchen. 9. Are there many large churches in Seville? Yes, the churches are magnificent, and the decorations very costly. 10. Do you know this friend of mine? No; I have seen (*visto*) his brother, but I do not know (*no conozco*) your friend.

Lesson V

CONVERSATION:

(a) Doy a Carlos mi libro; le doy mi libro. ¿Qué hago yo, Carlos?—Vd. me da su libro. Doy a Vds. estos libros. ¿Qué hago yo?—Vd. nos da estos libros.

¿Le doy a Vd. mi libro, Carlos?—Sí, señor, (Vd.) me lo da. ¿Les doy a Vds. estos libros?—Sí, señor, (Vd.) nos los da. ¿Le doy a Vd. estas plumas, Juan?—No, señor, (Vd.) no me las da. ¿Doy a Juan mi libro?—Sí, señor, Vd. se lo da. ¿Por qué tomo yo el libro, Juan?—Para dárme lo. ¿Por qué tomo yo los libros?—Para dárme los. Aquí está su libro, Juan. ¿Qué quiere Vd. hacer?—Quiero leerlo. ¿No quiere Vd. prestármelo?—No, señor, no quiero prestárselo hoy.

¿Qué hace Vd. por la mañana, Carlos?—Me levanto, me baño, y me visto. Se levanta, se baña y se viste. ¿Qué hacen Vds. por la mañana? ¿Qué hago yo? ¿Por qué se desnuda_(n) Vd._(s)?—Para bañarme (-nos). ¿Por qué sale Vd. de la casa?—Para pasearme (dar un paseo).

(b) ¿Qué ha hecho Vd. ayer, Pedro?—Me he levantado pronto, luego me he desayunado, y me he ido al campo con Juan. Pedro y Juan, ¿qué han hecho Vds. ayer?—Nos hemos levantado, etc.

¿Qué libro ha leído Vd. hoy? ¿Qué lección han aprendido Vds.? ¿Cuántos libros he comprado? ¿Cuántas plumas he tomado? ¿Quién ha abierto las ventanas? ¿Cuántas lecciones hemos estudiado? ¿Cuántas ferias hemos tenido?

¿Qué está leyendo, Pablo?—Estoy leyendo este periódico. ¿A quién estamos aguardando?—Estamos aguardando a Antonio. No ha venido hoy a la escuela; tal vez está enfermo. ¿A quién está escribiendo, María? No estoy escribiendo una carta, sino un ejercicio para Vd. ¿Por qué están Vds. hablando?—No estamos hablando; estamos trabajando todos.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. I give him a book; he gives me a ruler; we give you our books; they give us their pens; you give them their exercises. 2. Do you send him letters? Yes, I often send him the letters which you write to me. 3. What is that? My book; I have brought it to school to-day. 4. Do you want (*quiere Vd.*) to read it? No, but John has not read it. 5. In order to give me these stamps, he came [*say*, has come] before breakfast. 6. Why have you not given them to him? 7. I have given it to them many times. 8. Before giving them to him, I have shown them to you. 9. I have read the paper to him but not to her. 10. I want to lend them to you, but I cannot (*no puedo*) lend them to your friend.

(b) 1. It is striking seven. I get up, wash, and dress. Then I comb my hair and go downstairs. 2. We have washed and dressed; we are going downstairs to the dining-room for breakfast. 3. You have washed, have you not? (*¿no es verdad?*) Will you give me the towel? I cannot give it you; it is not mine. 4. We sit down to (the) table; our breakfast is composed of bread and butter, eggs, and tea. 5. After supper I go upstairs in order to go to bed; if I am not very tired, however, I often read a novel before going to sleep. 6. Do you speak English in this shop? They say that we have won a great battle, but I do not speak Spanish, and I do not understand it when it is spoken (*se habla*). 7. Yes, they say the English have won a battle, but we have not had a paper this morning. 8. What is that man doing? [*use progressive form*]. He is listening to a friend who is singing a song. 9. I am looking for my brother now. Have you seen (*visto*) your friends? No, if I see (*veo*) them I will introduce them to you. 10. Do you play the piano or the violin? No, but I want to play them. I must work hard (in order) to be able to play them well.

Lesson VI

CONVERSATION:

(a) ¿Qué hará Vd. por la mañana, Pablo?—Me levantaré, me lavaré la cara, y luego me desayunaré. Después de eso, me marcharé con Juan a la escuela, y trabajaré hasta el fin de las clases. ¿Qué harán Vds., Pablo y Juan?—Nos levantaremos, etc. ¿Qué haremos? ¿Qué haré yo? etc.

Hoy estoy cansado; mañana no estaré cansado. ¿Estará Vd. cansado, Pablo? ¿Cuántos discípulos tenemos hoy? ¿Cuántos tendremos por la mañana? ¿Quién no vendrá? ¿Quién no está aquí? ¿Cuántos libros traerá Vd. a la clase de francés?

(b) Tome Vd. su libro, Juan. Voy a leer el primer cuento. Escúcheme Vd. Léalo Vd. Vd. lee muy bien. Lea Vd. esta frase. Repítala Vd. ¡Está bien! Lea Vd. el segundo cuento, Carlos. Copien Vds. el tercer cuento. ¿No lo comprende Vd., Pablo?—Mírenme Vds. Voy a explicárselo. Escriban Vds. esta palabra. Escríbala otra vez, Pedro.

Un buen lápiz; una buena pluma. Una casa grande. Un gran día. El día de San Pablo, de San Pedro, de Santo Tomás. Una semana tiene siete días; un día tiene veinticuatro horas. ¿A cuántos estamos hoy?—Estamos a diez, etc. ¿En qué mes estamos? ¿En qué estación estamos? etc. ¿En qué año nació Vd., Juan?—Nací en 1903. Hoy estamos a 17 de octubre de 1917. Nací el 14 de febrero de 1902. Me llamo Valentín. El día de mi santo es el 14 de febrero.

Un hombre tiene dos manos, dos piernas, diez dedos, dos ojos, dos orejas, una nariz, una boca, una cabeza. No tengo más de una nariz,—más de dos ojos. ¿Tiene Vd. más de una pierna? ¿Tiene Vd. más hermanos que yo?—He traído menos libros de los que he traído ayer. Este discípulo no es tan alto como ése. ¿Tiene Vd. tantos lápices como plumas?—Esta frase no tiene tantas palabras como ésa.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. I shall be tired this evening; we shall be thirsty. 2. Will you be hungry? they will be very hot; we shall not be sleepy. 3. He will have had three pesetas; I shall have given them to him; they will have sent us some flowers. 4. We shall learn this lesson to-night, and say it the day after to-morrow. 5. I shall work from now until to-morrow (in the) morning. 6. Give me your note-book. I will give it to you, but not to him. 7. What will you do (*hará*) to-morrow? It will be Sunday: I shall go to church in the morning; after dinner I shall spend the afternoon with my mother and brothers. 8. Will you take some coffee? Thank you, I do not like coffee. We will take tea, then; we also want the sugar and the milk. 9. Get up early, come downstairs, and I will be in the dining-room; we will do our lessons together until breakfast. 10. If you give me his address I shall lose it.

(b) 1. It is Sunday the 21st of October. To-morrow will be Monday; I do not like Mondays. 2. His name is Edward; he lives in London; he will be sixteen on the first of May; his brother will be twenty on May the seventh. 3. Spring will begin on the 21st of March; that is a Sunday, and I shall go into the country with my father to pick flowers. 4. Twelve and fifteen are twenty-seven; thirty and forty-five are seventy-five. 5. Do not forget that the field is three hundred feet wide and five hundred feet long. 6. How many days are there in a year? Three hundred and sixty-five. 7. There are seven days in a week; each month has four weeks and thirty or thirty-one days. 8. This is a good bookshop. I have seen a most beautiful volume of poetry by a great poet in this shop. 9. Have you any copies? We have the first volume and the second, sir, but we have sold the third volume. 10. My book has a hundred pages; yours has a hundred and seven.

Lesson VII

CONVERSATION:

(a) Buenos días. ¿Cómo está Vd.?—Muy bien, gracias. ¿Y Vd.? ¿Qué tiene Vd.?—No tengo nada. Tengo hambre. ¿Tiene Vd. los ojos cansados?—No, señor, pero tengo mucho sueño. He estado muy enfermo. He tenido la pierna rota. Si no como, tendré mucha hambre,—estaré enfermo.

¿Habla Vd. mucho en la clase?—Sí, señor, pero Juan habla más. No hablo tanto como Vd. quiere. ¿Vd. habla bien francés, no es verdad?—Sí, señor, pero hablo mal alemán y peor español. ¿Por qué no habla Vd. más despacio?—No sé, señor; es muy difícil. Su amigo de Vd. trabaja poco, y Vd. trabaja menos que él.

(b) Aquí hay un cuchillo, una cuchara, un tenedor, una servilleta y dos o tres platos. Para comer, cojo el tenedor en la mano izquierda y el cuchillo en la mano derecha. ¿Qué tengo ahora en las manos, Juan?—Vd. no tiene nada (no hay nada en sus manos). Nadie tiene esta cuchara. Nadie está a la puerta. Yo no veo a nadie. Cada u. o come tres veces al día. Las tres comidas son: el desayuno, la comida, y la cena. ¿Ha comido Vd. hoy frutas?—No, señor, no he comido ningunas frutas. ¿Ha bebido Vd. vino?—No, señor, no he bebido nada (ningún vino). ¿A qué hora comen Vds.? ¿Quiere Vd. almorzar conmigo? ¿Toma Vd. el te?—Tome Vd. mi plato; no hay otro. Aquí está el mismo cuchillo que he visto ayer. ¿No quiere Vd. tomar otra taza de café? ¿No tiene Vd. otra cuchara? ¿Tiene Vd. algo?—Sírvase Vd. tomar la sal. No la hay.

¿No puede Vd. quedarse? ¿Se va Vd. sin tomar nada?—Lo siento mucho. ¿Quiere Vd. un paraguas o un sobretodo?—Gracias, señor, no quiero ni el uno ni el otro. Espero volver mañana por la tarde. Llegaré a las cinco. Hasta mañana.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. Do you want (*¿quiere Vd.?*) more? No, I eat less now than I did formerly. 2. He wants a little less; he has more than he wants. 3. Come here; he is not there; he is standing here. 4. Are you calling your nephew? Here I am, uncle! Come here; I want to speak to (*con*) you. 5. I write English more easily than French, but I speak it more slowly. 6. Do you like my new suit? Yes, very much: I like it much better (*say, more*) than mine. 7. I am very tired and very hot; I shall not eat very much to-night, but John always eats a great deal. 8. What shall we give him? I don't know; what does he like best (*say, most*)? 9. Here are some oranges, very large and sweet; we have also pears, lemons, apples, and a few peaches. 10. The peaches are getting ripe very slowly; we want more sun. Peel me an apple, please.

(b) 1. Have you a few pencils? Will you lend them to me? Yes, I will give them to you if you like. 2. Come (*venga Vd.*) with me, and I will show you your bedroom. 3. I have no soap and no towels. The sheets on the bed are not clean. 4. Every day we go for a walk into the country; some day I shall buy another bicycle. 5. Each house has four floors; the porter and his wife live in the lodge. 6. How many plates are there on the table? There are none; we want four small plates and two large ones. 7. Bring us a little salt, waiter, and another glass. 8. I have bought some chocolates for you, but I have brought nothing for him. 9. We shall play without them if they are not here. 10. Is there anything on my writing-desk? Yes, a few post-cards and two or three newspapers. That is all.

Lesson VIII

CONVERSATION:

(a) *El profesor.* Cuando tenía quince años (como Vds.) me levantaba más temprano que Vds. Me despertaba mi padre a las cinco, y tenía que levantarme. Me lavaba la cara y las manos, me vestía y bajaba al comedor para desayunarme. Después del desayuno me marchaba con mis hermanos a la escuela.

¿A qué hora me levantaba? ¿Me gustaba el levantarme? ¿Le gustaría a Vd. el levantarse tan temprano? ¿Quién me despertaba? ¿Quién despierta a Vds.? ¿Qué hacía yo después de levantarme? ¿A dónde me marchaba después del desayuno?

El año pasado Vds. no estudiaban el español. ¿Qué estudiaban Vds. por la mañana? ¿Y por la tarde? ¿Estudiaban Vds. el francés? ¿Les gustaba a Vds. el francés? ¿Les gustaba a Vds. el español cuando lo empezaron?—No, señor. ¿Por qué?—Porque era muy difícil.

(b) ¿Qué hizo Vd. (hicieron Vds.) cuando yo entré en la clase?—Me senté (nos sentamos). ¿Qué hice yo cuando entré?—Vd. cerró la puerta. ¿Qué hice después de eso?—Vd. abrió su libro. ¿Qué hice yo ayer después de tomar sus ejercicios?—Vd. abrió la puerta y se marchó.

¿Qué hacían Vds. cuando yo entré en la clase?—Hacíamos varias cosas. ¿Qué hacía Vd., Juan?—Hablaba con Pedro. ¿Y qué hacía Vd., Pablo?—Escribía mi ejercicio de español. ¿Por qué no escribió Vd. su ejercicio ayer?—Porque no tenía tiempo. ¿Les gustaría a Vds. si yo les daba un ejercicio más breve?—O, sí, señor, mucho. María ¿que hacía Vd. cuando yo le llamé?—Hablaba de mi lección.—No hable Vd. nunca en la clase.

Necesito un libro. He perdido el mío. Déme Vd. el suyo. Gracias, Juan. Escriban Vds. el segundo ejercicio. ¡Cómo! ¿No tiene Vd. su pluma? ¿No la tenía Vd. ayer?—Sí, señor, pero la he perdido. ¿Quién prestará a Juan una pluma? Gracias, Pedro.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. When I entered the wood, the gamekeeper was sitting under a tree. 2. He declared that nobody had come. 3. There were many trees in the wood, but they had very few leaves; the branches were almost bare. 4. I left the house after dinner, and climbed the hill; I met several boys who were going back to school. 5. When I came down the hill I saw (*vi*) a river in the distance. 6. When we returned, we found them at home. 7. We sat down under a beech-tree and rested. 8. Did they rest after breakfast? No, they set out early in order to see the castle. 9. There was once a great giant who lived in a cave; he used to go out every day to catch little children. 10. When I was young, I used to get up early, come downstairs, and write an exercise or learn my lessons before breakfast.

(b) I wanted to go to London to see my brother who had just (*acababa de*) returned from France. When I started it was raining in torrents, but I took my umbrella and my overcoat and walked to the station. There were two ladies in the booking-office when I went in; they had just taken their tickets, and the porter was registering their luggage. I asked for a third-class ticket to London. "Single?" asked the booking-clerk. "No," I replied, "a return." Then the train came in It was still raining when we arrived in London. I got down from the train and went into the waiting-room. My brother was standing in front of the fire. He looked very tired and ill. "You are very late," he exclaimed. "Did you have to change?" "No," I replied, "but we started late." "Are you hungry?" said (*dijo*) my brother. "We will go to a restaurant."

Lesson IX

READING:

LA NUEZ

(a) Dos niños encontraron una nuez bajo un nogal inmediato al pueblo. “¡Esta nuez me pertenece! dijo Roberto, por que yo soy quien la ha visto el primero.” “¡No! es mía, por que yo he sido quien la ha recogido del suelo,” replicó Bernardo. Y entre ambos se produjo una violenta disputa.

“Vamos, amigos míos, yo voy a ponerlos de acuerdo,” les dijo otro niño de mayor edad y más fuerte que llegó en aquel momento.

Se colocó entre ambos, abrió la nuez y dijo: “La mitad de la cáscara pertenece al que vió primero la nuez; la otra mitad al que la recogió. En cuanto a lo de adentro, es para mí, por los gastos del juicio.”

LAS HORMIGAS

Lo que hoy las hormigas son,
 Eran los hombres antaño;
 De lo suyo y de lo extraño
 Hacían su provisión.
 Júpiter, que tal pasión
 Notó de siglos atrás,
 No pudiendo aguantar más,
 En hormigas los transforma. . .
Ellos mudaron de forma;
 ¿Y de costumbres? Jamás.

Samaniego.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Qué encontraron los dos niños? 2. ¿Qué dijo Roberto? 3. ¿Por qué dijo Bernardo que la nuez le pertenecía a él? 4. ¿Quién llegó en este momento? 5. ¿Qué dijo el tercer niño? 6. ¿A quién pertenecía la primera mitad de la cáscara? 7. ¿Por qué pertenecía a Bernardo la segunda mitad de la cáscara? 8. ¿Qué ganó el niño mayor en la disputa? 9. Reconstruya Vd. el cuento en pocas palabras. 10. Reconstruya Vd. el cuento, usando la primera persona del presente de indicativo. 11. ¿Por qué transformó Júpiter los hombres en hormigas? 12. ¿Cuáles eran las costumbres de estos hombres?

TRANSLATION:

There was once a poor woman who lived in a little cottage with her husband. They had only this cottage and a little garden in which grew vegetables and fruit. But they were very happy, and wanted only one thing—a son.

One day a poor beggar arrived at their cottage. The woman opened the door, and, when he asked if he might rest in her cottage, replied that she would also give him some bread, if he wanted it. He sat down in her arm-chair, and ate the bread and the milk which she provided. When he had finished he stood up and said: "I must go away now, good woman, but before going I want to give you something in return for your hospitality." The poor woman was very much surprised, for she did not know that the beggar was a great magician, and could give her beautiful presents. "Who are you, sir?" she said, trembling. "We want a little son very much [indeed]. Can you give us one?" "You shall have a son to-morrow," answered the magician, and went away.

Lesson X

READING:

LA GRAN COL

(a) Al atravesar un pueblo, dos obreros pasaron por delante de una huerta. “¡Mira, qué hermosas coles!” dijo el primero. “¡Jamás las he visto más grandes!” “¡Bah!” respondió su amigo; “esas coles no tienen nada de extraordinario. Un día, durante mis viajes, ví una que era más grande que la casa que se ve allá abajo.” “Me parece que exageras,” contestó el primero, que era calderero de oficio, “sin embargo, me acuerdo haber trabajado en la construcción de una caldera que era tan grande como la iglesia.” “¿De veras?” respondió su amigo. ¿Y qué querían hacer con esa enorme caldera? “Debería servir para cocer la col de que acabas de hablarme.”

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Dónde se encontraban los dos obreros? 2. ¿Qué significa la palabra “huerta”? 3. ¿Qué exclamó el obrero? 4. ¿Qué dijo su amigo para burlarse de él? 5. ¿Cuál era el oficio del primero? 6. ¿Cuál es la profesión de su padre de Vd.? 7. ¿Qué habla Vd. en la clase? 8. ¿Cómo se llama él que no dice la verdad? 9. ¿Cómo se llama lo que dice? 10. ¿Qué hace un hombre que dice más que la verdad? 11. Reconstruya Vd. este cuento en pocas palabras, reemplazando la segunda persona del singular por la tercera (por ej.: ¡Mire Vd.!).

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. I have not received the parcel you sent me, which is very strange. 2. William, who was only twenty-seven years old, did not approve of his father's counsellors. 3. All the guests who were in the room applauded. 4. My father, whose library is very large, has left me most of his books. 5. Why did the enemy kill these men? Because they were traitors. 6. Cervantes, whose book "Don Quijote" is read (*use reflexive*) in every country, was a Spaniard. 7. Do you know what he is looking for? 8. I sent him my new book the day before yesterday, which surprised him very much. 9. The priest who has just preached is the vicar. 10. The soldiers to whom I write are in hospital.

(b) 1. There were two beggars at the church door; they were asking for alms, and said they had no money. 2. Did you give (*dió*) them anything? No, but Señor Gómez, who was with me, gave them a few pesetas. 3. Did they speak English? No, they spoke Spanish. 4. Alphonso the thirteenth, King of Spain, was born in 1887. 5. When the door opened he took off his hat and asked if anyone was at home. 6. A certain man, who was a soldier and detested women, once received a letter from a noble lady. 7. What a fine bird! Do you sell birds, or is this your own? 8. I have travelled in Italy, France, and the United States, but I do not speak many languages. 9. I do not know what the master means, and I do not want to ask him. 10. Can you not show them to me now? Yes, here they are. Are they not cheap? They only cost (*cuestan*) two pesetas a bottle.

Lesson XI

READING:

EL Eco

(a) El pequeño Jorge ignoraba todavía lo que es un eco. Un día se puso a gritar en la pradera "¡Eh! ¡eh! . . ." y oyó en seguida repetirse las mismas palabras en el bosquecillo inmediato. Creyendo que alguien estaba allí escondido, preguntó con un aire sorprendido: ¿Quién eres tú? Y la voz misteriosa repitió inmediatamente: ¿Quién eres tú?

Jorge replicó entonces: "¡Eres un imbécil! Y las mismas palabras le fueron devueltas inmediatamente por la misma voz. Ésto le encolerizó de tal manera que empezó a dirigir injurias al desconocido. Pero el eco se las devolvió todas. Jorge entró en el bosquecillo para buscar al insolente y vengarse de él, pero no encontró a nadie. Corrió a quejarse a su madre, diciéndole que un malvado se había escondido en el bosquecillo y le había injuriado.

Entonces la madre le respondió: "Esta vez eres tú él que te engañas, por que no has oído más que el eco de tus palabras."

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Qué hizo Jorge estando en el bosque? 2. ¿Qué oyó entonces? 3. ¿De qué se quejó a su madre? 4. ¿Qué le dijo su madre? 5. ¿Qué significan las palabras "bosque", y "bosquecillo"? 6. ¿Cómo se llama él que dice injurias? 7. ¿Cómo se engañó el niño? 8. ¿Cuál es la moral de este cuento? 9. Deme Vd. los contrarios de las palabras siguientes: pequeño, ignorar, inmediato, todo, entrar, responder. 10. Escriba Vd. lo que dijo Jorge a su madre.

TRANSLATION:

[Each word and phrase italicized in this exercise must be followed by the subjunctive. The student should learn them at this stage, so that the difficulty of the use of the subjunctive may be lessened later on.]

(a) 1. Do not read *unless* you have your spectacles. 2. I spoke to him *in order that* he might introduce me to his friend. 3. Please wake me early; I never wake *before* I am called. 4. Lend it to me *before* you sell it; give it him *whenever* you see (*vea*) him. 5. I *want* him to see this chapel; it is the most beautiful one in the cathedral. 6. Do not buy it *without* his sending it to you (or, *unless* he sends it to you). 7. Please send it to me; I have not bought it yet. 8. I *am afraid* that you have not enough sugar. Take some more, if you want any. 9. He *wants* you to study this paragraph, which he considers very important. 10. *Unless* he is ill, he must not leave the house before nightfall.

(b) 1. Madrid, September 20, 1917.—Dear Sir, I have just received the goods which you have sent me, and which I like very much. They are certainly of as good quality as the samples which you were good enough to send me a week ago. . . . 2. London, October 1, 1917.—Gentlemen, I have pleasure in remitting a cheque for the parcel of books which arrived the day before yesterday, and which gives me entire satisfaction. I also want a copy of Calderon's dramas, if possible by return of post. 3. At four o'clock on the seventh of April we were playing in the garden. At half-past four the telegram arrived; we caught the 5.10 train, and at a quarter to six we reached London. We wanted (*imperf.*) to see poor uncle as soon as we arrived at the house, but we found him unconscious. We returned on the ninth at eleven o'clock at night.

Lesson XII

READING:

EL ASTRÓLOGO PREVISOR

(a) En la corte de cierto monarca había un bribón que profetizaba. Quiso llamarle para hacerle una pregunta, y si ésta no le satisfacía, mandarle arrojar por una ventana. Preguntó pues al astrólogo, luego que éste se presentó, si sabía lo que iba a sucederle de allí a poco tiempo. Pero él, que tenía ya algún presentimiento de la intención del rey, le respondió: "Señor, sé muy bien que he de morir dos horas antes que Vuestra Majestad". Quedó el príncipe tan asustado con la respuesta, que le señaló allí mismo una buena pensión, encargándole mucho de que cuidase de su persona.

CONVERSATION:

(b) Juan, léame Vd. el cuento del astrólogo. ¿Le(s) gusta a Vd(s). este cuento? ¿Le(s) gustaría un cuento más largo? ¿Qué hace Vd., Pedro?—Empiezo el cuento del ciego. ¡Está bien! Empezaremos todos este cuento. ¿Por qué no?—No es bastante fácil. Queremos aprender la lección doce.

¿Qué tiene Vd. bajo su libro, Pablo?—No tengo nada. ¿Quién llama?—¡Hombre! ¡qué ruido! ¿Quién es?—No hay nadie (nadie está a la puerta). ¿Nadie?—No, señor, yo no veo a nadie.

¿Han leído Vds. el cuento del astrólogo?—Sí, señor, lo hemos leído todos. Lo han leído ya Vds. en inglés?—No, señor, no lo hemos leído nunca antes. Cuente Vd. las páginas que hemos leído. ¿Las ha contado Vd. ya? ¿Que hace Vd., María? ¿Cuenta Vd. también las páginas?—No, señor, yo cuento las palabras en el cuento del astrólogo. Contemos todos desde uno hasta ciento. Uno, dos, tres . . . etc.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. Do you have lunch at one o'clock? No, we generally have it at two. I never wake up before ten. 2. He approves of what is beautiful and hates what is ugly. 3. Begin this lesson; read me page twenty-one; we began to learn it at half-past seven, but we have not finished it yet. 4. The old man meets the boy who has lost the money which his father lent him. 5. He gives him some more, and the boy loses this also. Then he returns home. 6. The cruel enemy makes our homes desolate, kills our fathers and brothers, and burns our cities. 7. There was once a king who wanted to build a great palace in the centre of a wood. 8. Try these cigarettes! What nice cigarettes! How much do they cost? 9. I want to go out before it rains (*subj.*). Ask him for his umbrella! 10. He is trembling with (*de*) cold. Do not tremble; you ought (*debiera*) to be warm in this room.

(b) 1. Do you remember the church? Yes, here it is. Show it to me! It is on the right. 2. Have you seen (*visto*) the pulpit or the choir? No, I have seen nothing. They are very beautiful. You ought to see them. 3. There is nobody in the chancel; I don't see (*no veo*) anybody. 4. In that chapel there is a monk. I have never seen a monk. 5. It is very dark; there are no lamps in this church. 6. That is the church of St. Dominic, a great saint who lived in the twelfth century. 7. Never have I seen so beautiful a church. Who built it? Nobody knows. 8. Whom do you see (*ve Vd.*) behind the church? I see a blind man who is selling matches. 9. There is mass at seven and eight; high mass is at eleven. 10. When he came out of his house he met the priest, who was coming to see him.

Lesson XIII

READING:

EL CIEGO

(a) Cierta noche que tenía quinientos duros bajó una noche al corral de la casa y los enterró al pié de un árbol. Un vecino de la misma casa que por casualidad había bajado al patio, notó la acción del ciego, y al retirarse éste desenterró el dinero y se lo apropió.

Cuando el ciego fué a visitar su tesoro, no lo halló, como era natural; pero lejos de quejarse y desesperarse, disimuló su dolor y se puso a reflexionar. Se informó de la gente que vivía en la casa y supo que había en ella un vecino desocupado, chismoso y malgastador. No necesitó saber más el ciego para sospechar que el tal vecino era el ladrón, y con aire risueño fué a buscarle.

(b) “Vecino”, dijo el ciego, “Sé que Vd. es hombre discreto y amigo de hacer un favor; vengo a consultarle sobre un punto muy importante para mí. Poseo mil duros, de los cuales tengo escondidos quinientos en paraje seguro. Tengo intención de esconder también la otra mitad. Quiero saber si debo ocultarlos en el mismo sitio o en otro diferente, para no perderlo todo en caso de que me robaran.”

Se alegró el vecino con la culpable esperanza de pillar toda la cantidad, y dijo al ciego que los debiera depositar en el mismo escondrijo. Lo prometió así el robado, y el ladrón se apresuró a volver a poner los quinientos duros al pié del árbol, para coger luego los mil.

Pero aquella misma noche fué el ciego al paraje donde enterró su dinero, y habiendo hallado sus quinientos duros, se los metió en el bolsillo y puso en su lugar un papel con estas palabras: “Bien decía yo que era Vd. hombre amigo de hacer un favor; mil gracias por haberme ayudado a recobrar mi dinero.”

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. The criminal repented before his execution. 2. I am sorry—we are all very sorry—he was extremely sorry. 3. When I asked him for his address, he gave (*díó*) it me. But he would not consent to (*en*) dine with me. 4. His officer lied; he said (*dijo*) there were no troops in the village. 5. Louis XIV died in 1715; Louis XV, who succeeded him, died in 1774. 6. They sleep well; but I have had to close the windows. 7. Do not close the windows; the children will be very hot. 8. Not being an officer, I had not the right to see the fortress. 9. They are not wont to reply in this manner. 10. He may go if he likes, but I prefer to remain at home.

(b) 1. When he went to sleep, they closed the door and left him. 2. Why do the French prisoners complain? 3. They put on (*pret.*) long cloaks and riding-boots. 4. He approached, and we followed him without speaking. 5. The king was very weak, but he was beloved by all his subjects. 6. He looked at the notice, “Spanish spoken here”, and went away. 7. I have forgotten what you were saying; please repeat it to me. 8. Let us get up; it is a quarter to eight, and the sun is very bright. 9. Do your best; we shall return [on] the twelfth, and there will not be much more time. 10. They are very sorry [about] your misfortune, but there is no remedy.

Lesson XIV

READINGS:

CERVANTES

(a) En Alcalá de Henares a 9 de octubre de 1547 fué bautizado, en Santa María la Mayor, Miguel de Cervantes. Su familia era conocida como de hidalgos principales, aunque, a causa de su escasa fortuna, decaída de su antiguo esplendor; y como por aquel entonces la condición de noble era obstáculo para ejercer ciertas profesiones, y la escasez de medios no permitía a sus padres darle carrera digna de su clase, quizás fué este el principal motivo de que en su juventud o no siguiera ninguna, o las circunstancias le forzaran a abandonar en flor lo que principió.

Los primeros productos de su ingenio que vieron la luz pública, fueron un soneto, cuatro redondillas, una copla y una elegía con motivo de las solemnes exequias de la reina Isabel de Valois, mujer de Felipe II.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿En qué año nació Cervantes? 2. ¿En qué año murió el rey Eduardo? 3. ¿En qué estación estamos ahora? 4. ¿Cuándo empieza el verano? 5. ¿Hay nieve todo el año? 6. ¿Hay hielo en agosto?

Juan. Sí, señor, en ciertos países hay siempre nieve y hielo, ¿no es verdad? *El profesor.* Sí, el invierno en Laponia comienza en agosto y durante seis meses no aparece el sol en el horizonte. Los hombres viven en casas de hielo. *Juan.* Me alegro de no vivir en Laponia. Aquí hace bastante frío.

El profesor. ¿Qué tiempo hace ahora, Pablo?—Llueve a torrentes. — ¿Qué tiempo hacía ayer? — Hacía buen tiempo. Mañana habrá mucho lodo si no hace viento.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. He corrected the exercises before going to bed. 2. He asked why I was smiling. I was silent. 3. The people elected a president, who was to (*debía*) replace King Charles. 4. At that time the Jews used to persecute the Christians. 5. They make use of this railway to transport troops to the frontier. 6. They dressed hurriedly and went downstairs; the room was full of smoke, and a dog was barking furiously. 7. We repeated it to him, and he repeated it to the captain, who seemed very much surprised. 8. They followed the gardener until he disappeared behind the hedge. 9. They smiled when I asked them what they had seen. 10. I have more money than you, which is very strange.

(b) 1. In winter snow covers the ground, the wind is cold, and the water becomes ice. 2. In spring the trees blossom; we find flowers; it often rains, and the roads are muddy. 3. In summer the days are long; we get up at six o'clock, and go to bed at ten. 4. In autumn few flowers come out, but the fruit ripens, and there are apples, pears, and peaches. 5. To-day it is cold; but we have a holiday, and I want to go with some companions to see my uncle. 6. It is sunny to-day, but to-morrow it will probably rain. 7. Yesterday it was fine; it froze last night, and we did not want to get up this morning. 8. What date is it? The nineteenth of March. Then it ought to be warm. Spring begins on the twenty-first. 9. Three days ago we visited a friend who lives in a little country cottage. 10. He was very pleased to see us; he showed us his garden and his fowls, and we dined with him in the evening.

Lesson XV

READING:

CERVANTES Y "DON QUIJOTE".

(a) En diciembre de 1584, contrajo Cervantes matrimonio con doña Catalina de Palacios, y se dedicó a escribir comedias, que, si no satisfacían su buen gusto, el público pagaba, y aplaudía. Ya entonces, como ahora, la literatura en España no constituía carrera, y los literatos se veían en la precisión de desempeñar un empleo para atender con un sueldo mezquino a las necesidades de la vida.

Cervantes obtuvo el de comisario de las provisiones de la armada, y poco ducho en esta clase de negocios, un alcance de 2641 reales fué causa de que le encarcelaran; salió por fin después de pagarlos.

Después de varios sucesos, volvió a la cárcel, donde se cree escribió su gran libro *El ingenioso hidalgo D. Quijote de la Mancha*, y otras varias novelas: fué protegido en su indigencia por el conde de Lemos, a quien le escribió en sus últimos momentos lo siguiente: "Ayer me dieron la extremaunción y hoy escribo ésta: el tiempo es breve, las ansias crecen, las esperanzas menguan, y con todo esto llevo la vida sobre el deseo que tengo de vivir, y quisiera yo ponerle coto hasta besar los pies a vuestra excelencia."

CONVERSATION:

(b) Juan, déme Vd. un sinónimo de "contrajo matrimonio". ¿Comprende Vd. lo que quiero decir? ¿Quién comprende? Pablo. Yo comprendo, señor. "Se casó con ella" es sinónimo de "contrajo matrimonio con ella", ¿no es verdad? *El profesor*. Sí, es lo mismo. Pues bien, contesten Vds. a las preguntas siguientes.

1. Sinónimos de: contrajo matrimonio; no satisfacían su buen gusto; mezquino; se veían en la precisión de . . . 2. Contrarios de: ducho, la indigencia, ayer, vivir, una comedia. 3. Copien Vds. en tercera persona lo que Cervantes escribió al conde de Lemos. 4. Expliquen Vds. por qué Cervantes tuvo que ir a la cárcel.

TRANSLATION:

(a) We drew near to the town, in the centre of which rises the lofty spire of St. Peter's Church, without hearing any noise more warlike than that of the trains leaving the station. It was a magnificent spring day; the gardens were full of flowers and the trees were beginning to blossom. But when we arrived in the town, what a sad spectacle it was! "It can hardly be believed," my companion repeated several times, as we looked at the broken glass, the ruined houses, and the noble church which the barbarians had almost destroyed. Near the station we met the mayor, whom my friend had once known, and who recognized him immediately.

(b) 1. The doors and windows were open, and the floor was covered with papers. 2. No, I have not written to your cousin; I am writing now to my tailor. 3. The letter will be written before two; (at) what time does the postman come (*viene*)? 4. What is the latest time for sending a letter to the post? 5. After the letter was written, he went out to put it in the letter-box at the corner of the street. 6. He did not find the letter-box; when he returned he found his brother, to whom he had just written. 7. As soon as his brother had read the letter he tore it up. 8. "What are you doing?" he asked. "I am tearing up the letter which you have written." 9. Parliament has opened to-day; it has been summoned to discuss a most important question. 10. The speech has been read by the King, and there has been a long discussion between the Conservatives and the Liberals.

Lesson XVI

READING:

LA AMBICION

(a) El ambicioso es un esclavo de todo el mundo: del príncipe, porque conceda el empleo: del valido, porque interceda: de los demás porque no estorben. Tiene el alma y el cuerpo en continuo movimiento, porque es menester no perder instante. A todos teme, porque ninguno hay que con una acusación no pueda desvanecer toda su solicitud. ¡Oh cuánto forcejea con su semblante, porque muestre agrado a los mismos a quienes profesa mortal odio!

¡Cuánto trabajo le cuesta reprimir todas aquellas inclinaciones viciosas que pueden dificultar sus medras! De la pasión dominante son víctimas todas las demás pasiones, y el vicio de la ambición, como tirano dueño, sobre atormentarle por sí mismo, le prohíbe todos aquellos gustos a que le lleva el deseo. Ve al que va a la comedia, al que logra el paseo honesto, al que asiste al banquete, al que goza el sarao.

Todo lo ve, y todo lo envidia; pero los apetitos están en él, aunque furiosos, aprisionados como los vientos en la cárcel de Eolo. Logrado el puesto no se minora el ansia, sólo muda de objeto, porque se traslada la mira al ascenso inmediato, añadiendo el cuidado de no perder el que ha conseguido.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Por qué es el ambicioso un esclavo del príncipe? 2. ¿Por qué teme el ambicioso a todos? 3. Escriban Vds. los nombres de algunos ambiciosos. 4. ¿Quién era Eolo? 5. Escriban Vds. sinónimos de: es menester, aprisionar, el cuidado, el banquete. 6. ¿Conoce Vd. este libro? ¿Conocen Vds. este libro?—(Sí, señor, lo conozco - lo conocemos.) 7. ¿Traduce⁽ⁿ⁾ Vd.^(s) bien? 8. ¿Por qué traducimos estos cuentos? 9. ¿Por qué trabajamos? 10. ¿Para quién escribe Vd. este ejercicio? 11. Repita Vd. lo que digo. ¿Por qué no lo repitió Vd.?

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. I looked for the children without being able to find them. 2. Do not touch this railing; it is not very safe. 3. I take a sheet of paper, and he takes a sheet too; we always write our letters together. 4. Let us seal them, and (let us) pay the servant before going away. 5. He did not read that review; I am going to (a) lend it to him to-morrow morning. 6. We have received no answer; he will write [on] the fifth of April. 7. Do you know this boy? Yes, I know him well. I correct his essays every day. 8. Translate this phrase, and distinguish between "estar" and "ser". 9. He died with a laugh on his lips. Can you imagine it? he was only nineteen. 10. They related this adventure to Mr. Jones, who repeated it to me.

(b) 1. The prisoners asked him if he would give them their maps, but he answered that he could not. 2. It is starting to rain; it is very windy; I am going to look for John. 3. He remained at home for lack of money; then he sold his watch for fifty dollars, and bought the books he wanted. 4. It is [just] going to rain, and my umbrella has been taken by another lady. 5. Will you read to me? No, I prefer to read to myself. 6. After supper I looked for my husband, but I could not find him before ten o'clock. 7. He complained of me bitterly. Why? Because I had returned without him. 8. For a workman he seems very well educated. 9. The coach travels ten miles an hour; it goes towards Madrid, but it does not arrive at Arganda before midnight. 10. I will give you my Spanish novel for your French magazines.

Lesson XVII

READING:

(a) EL RATÓN DENTRO DEL QUESO

1

Mientras en guerras
Se destrozaban
Los animales
Por justa causa,
Un ratoncillo
¡Qué bueno es eso!
Estaba siempre
Dentro del queso.

2

Juntaban gentes,
Buscaban armas,
Formaban tropas,
Daban batallas;
Y el ratoncillo
¡Qué bueno es eso!
Siempre metido
Dentro del queso.

3

Ya el enemigo
Se ve en campaña:
Al arma todos,
Todos al arma;
Y el ratoncillo
¡Qué bueno es eso!
Siempre metido
Dentro del queso.

4

A uno le hieren,
A otro le atrapan
A otro le dejan
En la estacada;
Y el ratoncillo,
¡Qué bueno es eso!
Siempre metido
Dentro del queso.

5

Por fin lograron
Con la constancia
Sin enemigos
Ver la comarca;
Y el ratoncillo,
¡Qué bueno es eso!
Siempre metido
Dentro del queso.

6

Mas ¿quién entonces
Lograr alcanza
El premio y fruto
De tanta hazaña?
El ratoncillo
¡Qué bueno es eso!
Que siempre estuvo
Dentro del queso.

(b) EL JILGUERO Y LA RANA

Cerca de un estanque,
Sobre un arrayán
Un dulce jilguero
Comenzó a cantar.
Oyóle una rana
Soberbia y rapaz
Y díjole: "Calla,
Que cantas muy mal;
Escúchame un rato
Con calma y verás
Lo que es armonía,
Gusto y gravedad."

Paróse el jilguero
Y el bicho fatal
Dió cuatro graznidos
Fuera de compás.

*Este cuentecito,
No sin propiedad,
A algunos censores
Se puede aplicar.*

TRANSLATION:

While the king was speaking, his adversary was able to examine his face, but he could find in it not the smallest sign of weakness or of fear. The great chieftain had often spoken with him, but he had never before seen him in so determined a mood. When he had finished his speech, Gomez bowed. "Your Majesty," he said, "I consent."

He turned and left the palace. The soldiers who were at the gates saluted him, but he no longer had any power, and he knew it. His word had no longer the authoritative accent which is taken for granted with men accustomed to command. He smiled, but his smile was bitter; nobody could interpret it, and nobody would have wished to see it.

"I do not doubt your word," the king had declared, "but you cannot now hold the position which you have held until yesterday. You may remain in the town; you will not be molested. You may leave it if you wish: nobody will attempt to hinder you. But I cannot say more: I am the king of all my subjects."

Lesson XVIII

READING:

DESCUBRIMIENTO DE LA AMÉRICA—I

(a) El 3 de agosto de 1492 salió Colón del puerto de Palos con rumbo al Oeste y designió de pasar la longitud de las más remotas islas que los navegantes habían visitado por aquella parte. Perdidas de vista las costas de España, uno de los buques comenzó a hacer agua, y fué preciso arribar a las Canarias para hacer los reparos necesarios.

Colón, lleno de impaciencia, apenas estuvo el buque en estado de hacerse a la vela, salió del puerto, y no bien habían perdido de vista estas últimas tierras del mundo conocido, comenzaron los tripulantes a creer que se engolfaban en un océano sin limites, en cuya inmensidad iban a perecer infaliblemente.

Valióse Colón de toda su elocuencia para infundirles valor y confianza: pero pronto un fenómeno, desconocido hasta entonces, vino a resucitar en todos el terror. La brújula experimentaba trastornos que no habían observado jamás los navegantes, y ya creyeron que iba a faltarles la única guía que podía indicarles el rumbo de las tierras que buscaban, o la vuelta a la patria de lo que ya los separaba una gran distancia. Colón halló razones para tranquilizar sus ánimos y por lo pronto quedaron ellos satisfechos.

EXERCISES AND CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. Reconstruya Vd. el cuento en pocas palabras. 2. Introduzca Vd. cada una de las locuciones siguientes en una frase que comprenda (a) antes que, (b) creyó que, (c) no creyó que: un buque comenzó a hacer agua; su guía le faltaba; volvió a España. 3. Escriban Vds. el primer párrafo en el presente de indicativo. 4. ¿Si Colón no hubiese convencido a sus tripulantes, qué le habría pasado? 5. ¿Se habrían calmado los tripulantes si Colón no les hubiese dado seguridades? 6. ¿Es que habrían podido navegar si la brújula no les hubiera marcado el rumbo? 7. ¿Si fuera Vd. marino, que le gustaría más, navegar en barco de vela o buque a vapor?

TRANSLATION:

[Each of the phrases and words italicized in this exercise must be followed by the subjunctive. Those in Lesson XI should also be revised at this stage.]

(a) 1. He *was afraid* that his cousin would not arrive before midnight. 2. He *wanted* us to learn Spanish, *in order that* we should be able to travel in Spain. 3. He commended himself to God, and *asked* that his life might be spared. 4. It *was necessary* that we should spend plenty of money in order to become popular. 5. I *was very sorry* that the goods had not arrived in time. 6. It *was possible* that they had no servant, or that they were ill. 7. I could not *agree* to your (*en que Vd. . .*) lending me these diamonds. 8. I should not lend them to you *unless* you wanted them. 9. He *forbade* our using his garden, but he sent us a great many flowers. 10. Do you like the new gloves which I bought yesterday? Yes, very much.

(b) 1. If I see him, I will show him what you have sent me. 2. If you knew this, you ought not to have repeated it. 3. Count these eggs. How many are there?—Thirty; have you enough?—I think so. 4. If you have not enough, I will buy some more to-morrow. 5. When did Shakespeare die? In 1616 (words). 6. If he had lived to-day he would have hated our enemies. 7. If we worked more we should all be happier. 8. If he had not been afraid, he would have come to see us. 9. I wanted you to invite him to dine with you, but you refused. 10. I should like to talk to him. Would that all were as industrious as he is!

Lesson XIX

READING:

DESCUBRIMIENTO DE LA AMÉRICA—II

(a) Después de algunos días se vieron venir flotando sobre las aguas plantas, yerbas y aun nidos de pájaros, indicios todos de que ya la tierra estaba cercana: pero como pasaban días, y no se les presentaba, se sublevaron contra Colón, amenazándole con la muerte si no volvía el rumbo a España. El les prometió acceder a sus deseos, si en el término de tres días no veían la tierra que buscaba.

El 12 de octubre, poco después de media noche, se oyó al fin el grito de "tierra": y ya no fué una visión fantástica la que vieron al despuntar el día, sino una costa hermosa, cubierta de frondosos árboles y poblada de habitantes.

Revistióse Colón de las insignias de su autoridad: desembarcó con los suyos, besó respetuosamente la tierra que había sido por tanto tiempo el objeto de sus deseos, y tomó posesión de ella en nombre de los Reyes Católicos, Don Fernando y Doña Isabel.

Sus conmovidos compañeros cayeron de rodillas pidiéndole perdón por las pasadas murmuraciones y amenazas. Clavóse allí una cruz, y todos prosternados, entonaron cánticos de alabanza, y rindieron tributos de gracias al Ser Supremo.

Esta primera tierra descubierta fué bautizada por Colón con el nombre de San Salvador.

CONVERSATION:

(b) ¿Qué quiere Vd. decir? ¿Qué digo yo, Juan?—(Vd. dice . . .) ¿A dónde va Vd., Pablo?—(Yo voy . . .) ¿Sabe Vd. estas palabras, María? ¿Por qué abrió Pablo la puerta?—(Para ir . . .) ¿Por qué tomo yo su lápiz, Pedro?—(Para prestarlo a María.) ¿A quién lo doy? ¿Quién se lo da a Vd., María?

¿Qué dije yo? ¿Qué dijo Vd.? ¿Por qué hablaba Vd. cuando entré en el cuarto? ¿A dónde fué Colón? ¿En qué año? ¿Qué dijeron sus compañeros cuando hubieron desembarcado? ¿Qué dirán Vds. mañana si llueve?

Ponga Vd. las frases siguientes en el modo subjuntivo

valiéndose de cualquier frase que necesite este modo. Juan me da su libro; no dijo nada; voy a darle mi palabra; besó respetuosamente la tierra; no ha sido bueno; les prometió volver a España.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. I am going to tell (it) you. 2. They gave the beggar all he asked for without knowing who he was. 3. We are going for a walk; will you come with us? 4. Where are you going? I am going to the theatre to take three tickets. 5. What are they doing there (use *dar*)? They are going to do a comedy; I don't know its name, but my brother says it is very humorous. 6. Won't you go with me? I will take another ticket for you. 7. Give me two admission tickets; please give me your opera-glasses. I cannot see this man. 8. Who is he? Señor González, a friend of your brother's, isn't he? 9. The general knew that the enemy were in the trenches. 10. They do not know yet, but they will know before dinner; we knew it last night.

(b) 1. O that my father may arrive before my brother goes away! 2. I think he has seen the newspaper, but I do not think he knows that the French have occupied the town. 3. Do you think he has sent them to the soldiers? 4. It is certain that we have won this battle, is it not? 5. I am looking for a dictionary which has all the words I don't know. 6. Here is a good dictionary which has all the words in the language. 7. I am sure that the author of this book does not like the English. 8. He thought he saw his friend at the window, but found that it was a servant. 9. If I go to London, I shall buy a great many things. 10. What hour is that striking? It is striking three. It is just going to strike three. It has just struck three.

Lesson XX

READING:

(a) Los Dos MULOS

Iban dos mulos caminando un día,
 Cargado uno de yeso,
 Y otro de gran tesoro para el fisco.
 Iba éste tan ufano con el peso
 De su opulenta carga,
 Que no la soltaría por un reino.
 Marchaba mesurado
 Con grave paso, y levantado el cuello,
 Tocando su cencerro:
 Cuando hétele que sale
 De pronto una cuadrilla de bandidos,
 Que hambrientos de dinero,
 Sobre el ufano conductor se arrojan;
 Le rodean, le agarran por el freno,
 Le oprimen y detienen.
 Pretende resistirlo;
 Pero sintiendo al punto
 De todas partes sobre sí mil palos:
 “¿En esto” (dijo sollozando), “en esto
 Han venido a parar mis esperanzas?
 Este otro que me sigue,
 Me sigue sin peligro:
 Yo caigo en él, y del salir no fio.”
 “No siempre provechosos
 Los grandes cargos son, amigo mío,
 (Le dijo el camarada),
 Que ahora en tal apuro no te vieras,
 Si, a ejemplo mío, hubieses
 Prestado tus servicios a un yesero.”

CONVERSATION:

(b) ¿Qué hacían los dos mulos?—Juan, deme Vd. un sinónimo de “ir caminando”. ¿Ha olvidado Vd. la palabra “sinónimo”?—
 ¡Está bien! Pedro, ¿cómo va Vd. a casa—a pie o en bicicleta?

Mire Vd. por la ventana, Pablo. ¿Qué ve Vd.?—Veo el campo. ¿Quién está en el campo?—No veo a nadie. Mire Vd., Valentín, ¿a quién ve Vd.?—Veo a un hombre.—Muy bien.

¿Qué hace el hombre?—No sé. Este hombre es arador. Tiene dos caballos. Los caballos están arando el campo.

Lleve Vd. estos libros al profesor de francés, Eduardo. ¿Sabe Vd. donde está?—Creo que está en la gran sala. ¿No cree Vd. que esté en la sala?—No, señor, le he visto hace algunos minutos en el cuarto del Señor Ruiz. ¿Quién está a la puerta? ¿Es él?—No creo que sea él. Vaya Vd. a la puerta, Juan. ¿Quién es?—Es el Señor Fouquet. Déle Vd. estos libros. Muchas gracias. Hasta luego.

Deseo que venga Vd. aquí, Pedro. Deseo que Vd. me preste su libro. ¿Cree Vd. que este libro sea el mío? Sí, es su libro. ¿Dónde lo ha hallado Vd.?—Vd. me lo dió por el mío ayer, en la clase. ¿Es verdad?—Creía que se equivocó Vd. No me equivoqué, lo hice a propósito.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. They walked slowly across the square to the cathedral. It was just striking seven. 2. Don't worry about that; I shall see him before you go. 3. If you see my uncle, tell him that I am coming at half-past two. 4. I will meet him in the waiting-room if he does not want to leave the station. 5. If it were sunny I would go for a walk with you, but it is raining in torrents. 6. They said that they could do nothing; I think it was a pity. 7. What shall we do? Let us see! If it is not too windy, we will go into the town. 8. Do you think they know what we have done? I am afraid so. 9. Don't hurry yourself, sir; we have more than five hundred houses. 10. I am in a hurry; I am very busy to-day, and I have a letter to write before the post goes.

(b) 1. He said that we ought certainly to see the castle. 2. When we go to see him, we shall take him a present. 3. Wherever you go, and whatever you do, I will always be your friend. 4. As long as we were in the city we followed the advice of our guide. 5. Stay there until I return; then I will tell you what I have seen. 6. They went a year ago; I do not know when they will return. 7. They were extremely glad that we had not left the town without going to see them. 8. We do not like black bread; we are accustomed to white. 9. There is nothing that I know so well as this poem. 10. What can we do until the doctor arrives? I am afraid that there is nothing to be done.

Lesson XXI

READING:

ESCENA DE LA VIDA DE PIZARRO—I

(a) Empiezan, en fin, a entrar los indios en la plaza, ordénanse en ella según su costumbre, y en medio de ellos el Inca se pone de pie sobre sus andas como registrando el sitio y buscando con la vista a los extranjeros a quienes venía a encontrar. En esto se le presenta con un intérprete el dominicano Valverde, enviado por el Gobernador a hacerle las intimaciones y requerimientos de estilo. Llevaba en la mano una cruz, en la otra la Biblia. Puesto delante del monarca peruano, le hizo reverencia y le santiguó con la cruz, y después le dijo que él era sacerdote de Dios, cuyo oficio era predicar y enseñar las cosas que Dios había puesto en aquel libro, y le mostró la Biblia que llevaba; añadió, según se dice, alguna cosa de los misterios de la fé cristiana, de la donación de aquellas regiones hecha por el Papa a los reyes de Castilla, y de la obligación en que el Inca estaba de ponerse a su obediencia; y concluyó diciendo que el Gobernador era su amigo, que quería la paz con él, y se la ofrecía con la misma voluntad que hasta allí lo había hecho. Él como sacerdote se lo aconsejaba también, pues Dios se ofendía mucho de la guerra; y que entrase a ver al Gobernador en su aposento donde le esperaba para conferenciar con él sobre todos aquellos puntos. Dicho esto, presentóle la Biblia, que el Inca tomó en sus manos y volvió algunas hojas, y la arrojó al fin al suelo con muestras de impaciencia y de enojo. Ni el libro ni en gran parte las palabras del religioso podían en manera alguna ser inteligibles para él, por bien interpretadas que fuesen, lo cual es muy de dudar. Pero lo que sí entendió perfectamente bien, fué lo que se le decía de las intenciones pacíficas de aquellos extranjeros.

M. J. Quintana.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Qué hicieron los indios, después de haber llegado a la plaza? 2. ¿Por qué envió el Gobernador al dominicano? 3. ¿Qué tenía el dominicano en las manos? 4. ¿Qué dijo Valverde al monarca? 5. ¿Cómo concluyó su discurso? 6. ¿Qué

aconsejó Valverde al monarca? 7. ¿Qué hizo el Inca cuando hubo recibido la Biblia? 8. ¿Cuánto pudo comprender el monarca de lo que decía el dominicano? 9. ¿Por qué se enfureció con el dominicano?

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. "I cannot help weeping," said the princess as her lover disappeared. 2. Will you have the kindness to show me some more samples before closing the drawer? 3. We are not wont to ask twice; a king must be obeyed. 4. He cannot run, because he has broken his leg. 5. After three days, they were able to speak the language of the natives. 6. He could have gone if he had wished, but he did not like to leave his mother. 7. I could sing if you would be good enough to play the piano. 8. The more I read the works of this dramatist, the more I like them. 9. We sleep in the same room; if I wake early I call him before I get up. 10. What are you thinking of doing? I should like very much to travel in Spain, but I have not enough money.

(b) 1. They ordered the guide to call them at half-past four, so that they might breakfast at five. 2. They wanted to reach the top of the hill before sunrise. 3. As if he had seen us there, the old man came towards us. 4. If it did not rain, we might go to see him on Saturday. 5. You ought to give them to me, if you do not want them to be stolen. 6. I am sure that he will learn Spanish thoroughly if he works every day. 7. America was discovered by Columbus; this great man was a Spaniard. 8. When the doctor comes, you can ask him what you ought to have done. 9. When I go out, I always take an umbrella, although it seldom rains. 10. Would that our friends never deceived us! A good friend is more precious than much gold.

Lesson XXII

READING:

ESCENA DE LA VIDA DE PIZARRO—II

(a) Entonces Valverde, recobrado su libro, se fué para el Gobernador a darle cuenta del mal éxito de su conferencia. . . . Al mismo tiempo el Inca se volvió a poner de pie y habló a los suyos; de lo que resultó entre ellos ruido sordo y movimiento, que probablemente fué la causa inmediata de precipitarse la acción, tomando aquel aspecto atroz y espantoso con que ha pasado a los siglos posteriores.

Hace entonces Pizarro la señal, y al instante Pedro de Candía dispara sus mosquetes, los arcabuces le responden, las cajas y trompetas comienzan a sonar, los caballos se arrojan furiosos y embisten por tres partes a aquel murallón de hombres desnudos, y los infantes los siguen haciendo todo cuanto estrago pueden con las lanzas, con las ballestas, con las espadas. Al estruendo, tan espantoso y terrible como imprevisto y repentino, de armas, hombres y caballos parecía venirse abajo el cielo, la tierra temblaba, y no quedó entre los indios ni hombre seguro ni valor en pie. Todos, despavoridos y atónitos, o recibían pasmados la muerte sin osar moverse, o buscaban azorados salida para huir, y no encontraban por donde. Tomadas las puertas, alta la muralla, y ellos confusos y perdidos, se estorbaban y ahogaban, mientras que los castellanos los herían y mataban a su salvo. No puede en modo alguno darse el nombre de batalla a esta carnicería cruel.

M. J. Quintana.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿A dónde fué Valverde? 2. ¿Qué le dijo? 3. ¿Qué hizo el Inca? 4. ¿Quién era Pizarro? 5. Describan Vds. la batalla que siguió después. 6. Expliquen Vds. las frases siguientes: dar cuenta, ponerse de pie, imprevisto, pasmado. 7. Escriban Vds. los contrarios de: abajo, la causa, posterior, la muerte. 8. Escriban Vds. algunas frases introduciendo las palabras: vino, viene, venido, vendrán. 9. ¿Cuánto vale este

libro? ¿este reloj? ¿esa pluma? 10. Juan, ponga Vd. aquí lo que tiene en la mano. Díganme Vds. lo que ha hecho Juan.

TRANSLATION:

(a) 1. I can show you two books which have just come out; they cost five pesetas each. 2. Set the table! I have set it already, sir. 3. He put on his hat, took his mackintosh, and went out. 4. As soon as the messenger had come, we asked him if he had seen anyone on the way. 5. How much is my wardrobe worth? It is a fifteenth-century wardrobe; I think it is worth a great deal. 6. I don't think it is worth the trouble of reading (it). 7. They have postponed the wedding on account of the illness of the bridegroom. 8. The sun will have set before you arrive unless you take the train. 9. Come what may (come) I will go into the battle at the head of my valiant soldiers. 10. My servants came before I returned, but they waited for me at the door.

(b) 1. Working is pleasant when one is well, but resting is good [for one] when one is ill. 2. I want to have this book bound. Can you bind it for me? Bind it in cloth, please. 3. I heard some boys singing at two o'clock in the morning. 4. Have you seen anyone coming towards the house? Yes, I saw the postman coming upstairs. 5. Do you think you can walk? Oh yes, quite well. I am much better to-day. 6. They made him tell them all that he had seen, and then had him shot. 7. Without saying more, he seized the sentry and placed him in the ditch. 8. She is a Parisian, but she married a young German officer in 1903. 9. Seeing him fall, I called the doctor, who said that he was seriously ill. 10. The indispensable [thing] is that it should be fine.

Lesson XXIII

READING:

EL VOTO—I

(Por Emilia Pardo Bazán)

(a) Sebastián Becerro dejó su aldea a la edad de diez y siete años y embarcó con rumbo a Buenos Aires, provisto, mediante varias oncejás ahorradas por su tío el cura, de un recio paraguas, un fuerte chaquetón, el pasaje, el pasaporte y el certificado falso de hallarse libre de quintas—que, con arreglo a tarifa,¹ le facilitaron donde suelen facilitarse tales documentos.

Y en la travesía, le salieron a Sebastián amigos y valedores. Llegado a la capital de la República Argentina, diríase que un misterioso talismán—acaso la higa de azabache que traía al cuello desde niño—se encargaba de removerle obstáculos. Admitido en poderosa casa de comercio subió desde la plaza más ínfima a la más alta, siendo primero el hombre de confianza, luego el socio, por último el amo. Tan rápido encumbramiento se explicaría—aunque no se justificase—por las condiciones de hormiga de nuestro Becerro, hombre capaz de extraer un billete de Banco de un guardacantón. Tan vigorosa adquisividad—unida a una probidad de autómeta y a una laboriosidad más propia de máquinas que de seres humanos—daría por sí sola la clave de la estupenda suerte de Becerro, si no supiésemos que toda planta muere si no encuentra atmósfera propicia. Las circunstancias ayudaron a Becerro, y él ayudó a las circunstancias.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Dónde vivía el héroe de este cuento? 2. ¿Cómo se libró de ser soldado? 3. ¿Qué le había dado su tío? 4. ¿Qué hizo Sebastián en Buenos Aires? 5. ¿Cómo puede explicarse este éxito? 6. ¿Era su trabajo o su astucia lo que le proporcionó la fortuna?

¹ The precious document could not be obtained without payment. There was a fixed scale of charges!

TRANSLATION:

(a) Frederick the Great had a regiment which was composed entirely of very tall and fine men. When he noticed a fresh soldier in this regiment, he was in the habit of asking him three things. His first question was: "What is your age?"¹; the second was: "How long have you served in my army?"; and the third: "Do you receive your pay and rations regularly?"

A young Frenchman who could not speak German was admitted into this regiment on account of his height, and he was told to learn the answers to these three questions, because the king was going to review his troops on the following day. When Frederick saw the recruit he went up to him and began his questions with (*pour*) the second:

"How long have you been serving in the army?"

"Twenty-one years, your Majesty."

"What! Twenty-one years! How old are you then?"

"Only a day, your Majesty."

"What!" cried the king, "are you mad or am I?"

"Both, your Majesty," replied the soldier.

At this moment the captain of the regiment arrived, and explained to the king what had happened.

(b) 1. It does not concern me; it concerns only you and your friend. 2. There is no room for the box in your bedroom; put it in mine. 3. I should like to see it very much; would you be kind enough to show it to me? 4. Do what you like; I shall not come unless it is sunny. 5. Before seven o'clock I was at the station, waiting at the door of the booking-office. 6. O that I could see him before I die! 7. It may be that they will arrive before six. 8. Please sit down, I shall be back at ten minutes past nine. 9. He died on the 9th of April, 1743. 10. If he could have seen me, he would have been very pleased.

¹The king addresses the soldier throughout as "tú".

Lesson XXIV

READING:

EL Voto—II

(a) Desde el primer día vivió sujeto a la monástica abstinencia del que concentra su energía en un fin esencial. Joven y robusto ni volvió la cabeza para oír la melodía de las sirenas posadas en el escollo. Lenta y dura comprensión atrofió al parecer sus sentidos y sentimientos. No tuvo sueños ni ilusiones: en cambio tenía una esperanza.

¿Quién no la adivina? Como todos los de su raza, Sebastián quería volver a su nativo terruño, fincar en él y deberle el descanso de sus huesos. A los veintidós años de emigración, de terco trabajo, de regularidad maniática, de vida de topo en la topinera, el que había salido de su aldea pobre, mozo, rubio como las barbas del maíz y fresco lo mismo que la planta del berro en el regato, volvía opulento, cuarentón con la testa entrecana y el rostro marchito. Fué la travesía—como al emigrar—plácida y hermosa, y al murmullo de las olas del Atlántico, Sebastián, libre por vez primera de la diaria esclavitud del trabajo, sintió que se despertaban en él anhelos extraños, aspiraciones nuevas, vivas, en que reclamaba su parte alicuota la imaginación.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Qué esperanza tenía Sebastián? 2. ¿Ansiaba volver a su terruño? 3. Expliquen en otras palabras lo que significa "terruño". 4. ¿Qué edad tenía Sebastián al pisar su patria de nuevo? 5. Distingan Vds. entre "rubio" y "moreno". 6. Den Vds. lo contrario de "rostro marchito".

TRANSLATION:

(a) As soon as the troops had entered the city, the Colonel asked where he would find the mayor. He was told that he lived in the principal street, and he ordered a French soldier to show him the house. He then entered the house and enquired where Señor González was. "He is in his study," replied the frightened servant, "but I do not think he is alone." "No matter," replied the Colonel, "I must see him." "But he does not want to be disturbed, sir; he is very busy." Instead of replying, the Colonel went upstairs and began to open all the doors. While he was doing this, a small door on the right of the staircase opened, and the mayor himself appeared. He was a tall man of fifty or fifty-five years, dressed entirely in black, but wearing a small white flower.

(b) 1. There are seven or eight men in the drawing-room; they say they are friends of your husband. 2. I conducted them through the caves myself, and explained everything I could. 3. Did they come yesterday or to-day? I do not know. 4. He wrote many poems and stories, but he died in great poverty. 5. I could not write, but I have been to visit him this morning. 6. If he denies it, we shall prove that he is lying. 7. Is this yours or your sister's? He did not give it to you, but to her. 8. Do you approve [of] what he has done? 9. He saw the soldiers pass without saying anything to me. 10. Why don't you want him to teach you Spanish? Because I do not like languages.

Lesson XXV

READING:

EL VOTO—III

(a) Y a la vez, viéndose rico, no viejo, dueño de sí, caminando hacia la tierra, dió en una cavilación rara, que le fatigaba mucho; y fué que se empeñó en que la Providencia, el poder sobrenatural que rige el mundo, y que hasta entonces tanto había protegido a Sebastián Becerro, estaba cansada de protegerle, y le iba a zorregar disciplinazo: que el barco embarrancaría a la vista del puerto, o que él, Sebastián, se ahogaría al pie del muelle, o que cogería un tabardillo pintado, o una pulmonía doble. Como de estas aprensiones suele padecer el que se acerca a la dicha esperada largo tiempo. Y con superstición análoga a la que obligó al tirano de Samos a echar al mar la rica esmeralda de su anillo, Sebastián, deseoso de ofrecer expiatorio holocausto, ideó ser la víctima, y desechando antojos que le asaltaron al fresco aletear de la brisa marina y al murmullo musical del oleaje, si había de prometer al Destino construir una capilla, un asilo, un manicomio, hizo otro voto más original, de superior abnegación: casarse sin demora con la soltera más fea de su lugar. Solemnizado interiormente el voto, Sebastián recobró la paz del alma, y acabó su viaje sin tropiezo.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿Qué idea rara se le metió a Sebastián en la cabeza?
 2. ¿Qué ideas tenía? 3. ¿Es que temía a la muerte? 4. ¿Qué es un hombre aprensivo? 5. ¿Cómo se desvanecieron las cavilaciones que se había forjado? 6. Den Vds. la explicación de "voto" y formen una frase incluyendo dicha palabra.

TRANSLATION:

(a)

LONDON, *March 21st, 1917.*

GENTLEMEN,

I beg to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 18th inst. The samples which you have sent me give me entire satisfaction. I have not yet decided which of the wines I shall order, but I will write again within a few days.

Yours faithfully,

JOHN OUTWOODS.

SRES MARTINEZ Y CIA, MADRID.

(b)

MADRID, *April 10th, 1917.*

DEAR SIR,

My book entitled *Spain and the European War* has just appeared, and I have pleasure in sending you a copy. I should be pleased to hear your opinion of the book, and hope that you may be able to find time to write a review of it for the *Times*, as you kindly promised to do when we met in London last October.

Believe me,

Yours sincerely,

M. T. DE ALCALA.

BASIL WILD, Esq., LONDON.

(c) 1. (If it) please God, he will be able to walk before the summer. 2. Have you heard the postman yet? I hear him now. 3. Would to God (two forms) he might send the money which he owes me. 4. Listen! Who is that? I don't think it is the man you expect. 5. Why didn't you come when I asked you? It was raining too hard (much). 6. He might have given them the goods if he had had them.

Lesson XXVI

READING:

EL VOTO—IV

(a) Cuando llegó a la aldea poníase el sol entre celajes de oro; la campiña estaba muda, solitaria e impregnada de suavísima tristeza; todo lo cual es parte a sacar chispas de poesía de la corteza de un alcornoque, y no sé si pudo sacar alguna del alma de Sebastián. Lo cierto es que en el recodo del verde sendero encontró una fuente donde mil veces había bebido siendo rapaz, y junto a la fuente una moza como unas flores, alta, blanca, rubia, risueña; que el caminante le pidió agua, y la moza, aplicando el jarro al caño de la fuente, y sosteniéndolo después, con bíblica gracia, sobre el brazo desnudo y redondo, lo inclinó hasta la boca de Sebastián, encendiéndole el pecho con un sorbo de agua fría, una sonrisa deliciosa y una frase pronunciada con humildad y cariño: “Beba, señor, y que le sirva de salud.”

Siguió su camino el indiano, y a pocos pasos se le escapó un suspiro, tal vez el primero que no le arrancaba el cansancio físico; pero al llegar al pueblo recordó la promesa y se propuso buscar sin dilación a su feróstica prometida y casarse con ella, así fuese el coco. Y, en efecto, al día siguiente, domingo, fué a misa mayor y pasó revista de getas, que las había muy negruzcas y muy dificultosas, tardando poco en divisar, bajo la orla abigarrada de un pañuelo amarillo, la carátula japonesa más horrible, los ojos más bizcos, la nariz más roma, la boca más bestial, la tez más curtida y la pelambreira más cerril que vieron los siglos; todo acompañado de unas manos y pies como paletas de lavar y de una gentil corcova.

CONVERSATION:

(b) 1. ¿A qué hora llegó Sebastián a la aldea? 2. ¿Cómo parecía la campiña? 3. ¿A quién encontró Sebastián? 4. ¿Qué le pidió él? 5. Describan Vds. la moza. 6. ¿Qué dijo a Sebastián la moza? 7. ¿De qué promesa se acordó Sebastián? 8. ¿A quién buscaba? 9. Describan Vds. la fea a quién encontró. 10. ¿Se hubiera casado Sebastián con el coco mismo?

TRANSLATION:

(a) The distance between Cordoba and Seville was not great, but it was difficult to decide whether it was better to go by road or by rail. I myself wanted to walk, my brother said that he would prefer to ride, while my wife, who was tired, insisted on going by train. When we found that we could not persuade her to go by coach while we rode, my brother said that if we would allow him he would leave us and go alone. I refused, however, to allow this, and finally we all travelled by stage-coach.

The journey was not difficult. There were plenty of good inns, and we took comfortable seats before starting. We had several companions when we left Cordoba—an old gentleman who knew that we were English, and addressed us several times in that language, three schoolboys who laughed and chattered continually, and a soldier who looked at us with suspicion, as if he wondered why we were not in the army.

(b) 1. I know this gentleman well, and I have read his books many times. 2. He destroyed all their houses, and had anyone killed who resisted him. 3. When they recaptured the village they destroyed the enemy's tents, but killed no one. 4. He read the works of Calderon before he learned Spanish. 5. How did he read them if he knew no Spanish? He had an English translation. 6. They fled when he approached, although he could not see their faces. 7. Did he distinguish them? No, I don't think he ever saw them. 8. Is the water boiling? I think not. 9. It would be impossible to live there unless we brought everything that we wanted with us. 10. I always distinguish between guilt and ignorance, but I cannot distinguish between ignorance and laziness.

Lesson XXVII

READING:

EL VOTO—V

(a) Sebastián no dudó ni un instante que la monstruosa aldeana fuese soltera, solterísima y no digo solterona, porque la suma fealdad, como la suma belleza, no permite el cálculo de edades: cuando le dijeron que el espantajo estaba a merecer no se sorprendió poco ni mucho, y vió en el caso lo contrario que Polícrates en el hallazgo de su esmeralda al abrir el vientre de un pez: vió el perdón del Destino, pero . . . con sanción penal: con la fea de veras, la tea expiatoria. “Esta fea,” pensó, “se ha fabricado para mí expresamente, y si no cargo con ella, habré de arruinarme o morir.

Lo malo es que a la salida de misa había visto también el indiano a la niña de la fuente, y no hay que decir si, con su ropa dominguera y su cara de pascua y por la fuerza del contraste le pareció bonita, dulce, encantadora, máxime cuando, bajando los ojos y con mimoso dengue, la moza le preguntó “si hoy no quería agua bien fresca”. ¡Vaya si la quería! Pero el hado, o los hados (que así se invocan en singular como en plural) le obligaban a beber veneno, y Sebastián hecho un héroe, entre el asombro de la aldea y las bascas del propio espanto, se informó de la feona, pidió a la feona, encargó las galas para la feona y avisó al cura y preparó toda la ceremonia de los feos desposorios. . . .

(b) Acaeció que la víspera del día señalado, estando Sebastián a la puerta de su casa, que proyectaba transformar en suntuoso palacete, vió a la niña de la fuente, que pasaba descalza y con la herrada en la cabeza. La llamó, sin que él mismo supiese para qué, y como la moza entrase al corral, de repente el indiano, al contemplar tan linda indefensa—pues la mujer que lleva una herrada no puede oponerse a tales demasías—la tomó una mano y la besó, como haría algún galán del teatro antiguo. Rióse la niña, turbóse el indiano, ayudóla a posar la herrada, hubo palique, preguntas, exclamaciones, vino la noche y salió la luna, sin que se interrumpiese el coloquio, y a Sebastián le pareció

que, en su espíritu no era la luna, sino el sol de Mediodía lo que irradiaba en oleadas de luz ardorosa y fulgente. . . .

“Señor cura,” dijo pocas horas después al párroco, “yo no puedo casarme con *aquella*, porque esta noche soñé que era un dragón y que me comía. Puede creerme, que lo soñé.”

“No me admiro de eso,” respondió el párroco reposadamente.

“Pues el caso es que tengo hecho voto. ¿A usted que le parece? Si le regalo la mitad de mi caudal a esa fiera, ¿quedará libre?”

“Aunque no le regale usted sino la cuarta parte, o la quinta. . . .”

Sin duda el cura no era tan supersticioso como Becerro, pues éste, antes de casarse con la bonita, hizo donación de la mitad de sus bienes a la fea, que salió ganando, pues no tardó en encontrar marido muy apuesto y joven. Lo cual parece menos inverosímil que el desprendimiento de Sebastián. Verdad que era fruto del miedo.

LOS DOS ESPEJOS

(c) En el cristal de un espejo
A los cuarenta me ví,
Y, hallándome feo y viejo,
De rabia el cristal rompí.

Del alma en la transparencia
Mi rostro entonces miré,
Y tal me ví en la conciencia
Que el corazón me rasgué.

Y es que, en perdiendo el mortal
La fe, juventud y amor,
¡Se mira al espejo, y . . . mal!
¡Se ve en el alma, y . . . peor!

Ramón de Campoamor.

Additional Reading Selections

Below are appended some additional selections for reading in the form of well-known fables, taken from the collection of Félix María de Samaniego (1774-1806).

EL LEÓN Y LA ZORRA

Un león en otro tiempo poderoso,
 Ya viejo y achacoso,
 En vano perseguía, hambriento y fiero,
 Al mamón becerrillo y al cordero,
 Que trepando por la áspera montaña,
 Huían libremente de su saña.
 Afligido de la hambre a par de muerte,
 Discurrió su remedio de esta suerte:
 Hace correr la voz de que se hallaba
 Enfermo en su palacio, y deseaba
 Ser de los animales visitado.
 Acudieron algunos de contado;
 Mas como el grave mal que lo postraba
 Era un hambre voraz, tan sólo usaba
 La receta exquisita
 De engullirse al *monsieur* de la visita.
 Acércase la zorra de callada,
 Y a la puerta asomada,
 Atisba muy despacio
 La entrada de aquel cóncavo palacio.
 El león la divisó, y en el momento
 La dice: "Ven acá; pues que me siento
 En el último instante de mi vida,
 Visítame como otros, mi querida."
 —"¡Como otros! ¡Ah señor! he conocido
 Que entraron, sí, pero no han salido.
 Mirad, mirad la huella,
 Bien claro lo dice ella;
 Y no es bien el entrar do no se sale."
La prudente cautela mucho vale.

LOS DOS AMIGOS Y EL OSO

A dos amigos se apareció un oso:
El uno, muy medroso,
En las ramas de un árbol se asegura;
El otro, abandonado a la ventura,
Se finge muerto repentinamente.
El oso se le acerca lentamente;
Mas como este animal, según se cuenta,
De cadáveres nunca se alimenta,
Sin ofenderlo lo registra y toca,
Huélele las narices y la boca;
No le siente el aliento,
Ni el menor movimiento;
Y así se fué diciendo sin recelo:
“Éste tan muerto está como mi abuelo.”
Entonces el cobarde,
De su grande amistad haciendo alarde,
Del árbol se desprende muy ligero,
Corre, llega y abraza al compañero,
Pondera la fortuna
De haberle hallado sin lesión alguna,
Y al fin le dice: “Sepas que he notado
Que el oso te decía algún recado.
¿Qué pudo ser?”—“Diréte lo que ha sido;
Estas dos palabritas al oído:
*Aparta tu amistad de la persona
Que si te ve en el riesgo, te abandona.*”

JÚPITER Y LA TORTUGA

A las bodas de Júpiter estaban
Todos los animales convidados:
Unos y otros llegaban
A la fiesta nupcial apresurados.
No faltaba a tan grande concurrencia
Ni aún la reptil y más lejana oruga,
Cuando llega muy tarde y con paciencia,
A paso perezoso, la tortuga:

Su tardanza reprende el dios airado,
 Y ella le respondió sencillamente:
 “Si es mi casita mi retiro amado,
 ¿Cómo podré dejarla prontamente?”
 Por tal disculpa Júpiter tonante,
 Olvidando el indulto de las fiestas,
 La ley del caracol le echó al instante,
 Que es andar con la casa siempre a cuestras.

*Gentes machuchas hay que hacen alarde
 De que aman su retiro con exceso;
 Pero a su obligación acuden tarde;
 Viven como el ratón dentro del queso.*

EL ASNO Y EL CABALLO

“¡Ah! ¡quién fuese caballo!
 Un asno melancólico decía;
 Entonces sí que nadie me vería
 Flaco, triste y fatal como me hallo.

“Tal vez un caballero
 Me mantendría ocioso y bien comido,
 Dándose su merced por muy servido
 Con corvetas y saltos de carnero.

“Trátanme ahora como vil y bajo;
 De risa sirve mi contraria suerte;
 Quien me apalea más, más se divierte,
 Y menos como cuando más trabajo.

“No es posible encontrar sobre la tierra
 Infeliz como yo.” Tal se juzgaba,
 Cuando al caballo ve cómo pasaba,
 Con su jinete y armas, a la guerra.

Entonces conoció su desatino,
 Rióse de corvetas y regalos,
 Y dijo: “Que trabaje y lluevan palos,
 No me saquen los dioses de pollino.”

EL LEÓN Y EL RATÓN

Estaba un ratoncillo aprisionado
 En las garras de un león; el desdichado
 En la tal ratonera no fué preso
 Por ladrón de tocino ni de queso,
 Sino porque con otros molestaba
 Al león, que en su retiro descansaba.
 Pide perdón, llorando su insolencia;
 Al oír implorar la real clemencia,
 Responde el rey en majestuoso tono
 (No dijera más Tito): "Te perdono."
 Poco después cazando el león tropieza
 En una red oculta en la maleza:
 Quiere salir, mas queda prisionero;
 Atronando la selva ruge fiero.
 El libre ratoncillo, que lo siente,
 Corriendo llega: roe diligente
 Los nudos de la red de tal manera,
 Que al fin rompió los grillos de la fiera.

*Conviene al poderoso
 Para los infelices ser piadoso;
 Tal vez se puede ver necesitado
 Del auxilio de aquel más desdichado.*

LOS NAVEGANTES

Lloraban unos tristes pasajeros
 Viendo su pobre nave combatida
 De recias olas y de vientos fieros,
 Ya casi sumergida;
 Cuando súbitamente
 El viento calma, el cielo se serena,
 Y la afligida gente
 Convierte en risa la pasada pena;
 Mas el piloto estuvo muy sereno
 Tanto en la tempestad como en bonanza;
*Pues sabe que lo malo y que lo bueno
 Está sujeto a súbita mudanza.*

EL LOBO Y EL PERRO

En busca de alimento

Iba un lobo muy flaco y muy hambriento.

Encontró con un perro tan relleno,

Tan lucio, sano y bueno,

Que le dijo: "Yo extraño

Que estés de tan buen año

Como se deja ver por tu semblante,

Cuando a mí, más pujante,

Más osado y sagaz, mi triste suerte

Me tiene hecho retrato de la muerte."

El perro respondió: "Sin duda alguna

Lograrás, si tú quieres, mi fortuna.

Deja el bosque y el prado;

Retírate a poblado;

Servirás de portero

A un rico caballero,

Sin otro afán ni más ocupaciones

Que defender la casa de ladrones."

—"Acepto desde luego tu partido,

Que para mucho más estoy curtido.

Así me libraré de la fatiga,

A que el hambre me obliga,

De andar por montes sendereando peñas,

Trepando riscos y rompiendo breñas,

Sufriendo de los tiempos los rigores,

Lluvias, nieves, escarchas y calores."

A paso diligente

Marchaban juntos amigablemente,

Varios puntos tratando en confianza,

Pertenecientes a llenar la panza.

En esto el lobo, por algún recelo,

Que comenzó a turbarle su consuelo,

Mirando el perro, dijo: "He reparado

Que tienes el pescuezo algo pelado.

Dime: ¿Qué es eso?"—"Nada."

—"Dímelo, por tu vida, camarada."

—"No es más que la señal de la cadena;

Pero no me da pena,
Pues aunque por inquieto
A ella estoy sujeto,
Me sueltan cuando comen mis señores,
Recíbenme a sus pies con mil amores:
Ya me tiran el pan, ya la tajada,
Y todo aquello que les desagrada;
Éste lo mal asado,
Aquél un hueso poco descarnado;
Y aun un glotón, que todo se lo traga,
A lo menos me halaga,
Pasándome la mano por el lomo;
Yo meneo la cola, callo y como.”
—“ Todo eso es bueno, yo te lo confieso;
Pero por fin y postre tú estás preso:
Jamás sales de casa,
Ni puedes ver lo que en el pueblo pasa.”
—“ Es así.”—“ Pues, amigo,
La amada libertad que yo consigo
No he de trocarla de manera alguna
Por tu abundante y próspera fortuna
Marcha, marcha a vivir encarcelado;
No serás envidiado
De quien pasea el campo libremente,
Aunque tú comas tan glotonamente
Pan, tajadas y huesos; porque al cabo,
No hay bocado en sazón para un esclavo.”

Pronunciation Exercises

Vowels:

desahogarse. onomatopeya. geodesia. ahorro. camarada.
cuidadoso. alambicado. meteoro. sinalefa. huérfano.
inicuo. bacalao. cilíndrico. redomado. equívoco. coefi-
ciente. amaestrar. inhumano. mondadientes. guardapiés.
fraguais. cambiais. cáustico. sobreesdrújulo. combinariais.

Consonants:

b, v

Aunque bobo, volvió a valerse de su bobería para burlarnos.
Bárbaro y brutal, pero valiente y con nobleza.
Cantaba el inválido en una barraca ambulante.

d, ð

Dándome Doña Dolores la bolsa, dormiré tranquilo.
Definitivamente saldó las deudas.
Cuando lo dijo todo, discernimos con claridad la causa.

t

Los terratenientes tuvieron temor.
El terrible tormento de Tántalo.
Date prisa y tómate el te.

k, θ

De setecientos, ciento se hicieron célebres.
Cedieron y zozobraron por su escasa firmeza.
Pareció efecto de la clemencia celeste.

s, z

Empezóse a esbozar la oposición.
Los estertores del asmático.
Se quedó suspenso, como el asno de Buridán.

l, r, ʝ

Al rodar el rápido armatoste, alborotóse el rebaño.
"Rumor de besos y batir de alas."
El raro color de aquel mármol liso y duro.

g, ɣ

Tengo gana de organizar una gran cabalgata.
Ganarás al juego, pero no gozarás con el dinero que del
juego venga a ti.
La gárgola goteaba sobre el fangoso suelo.

x

Joaquín y José ejercían la judicatura.
Fingieron un viaje a Jauja.
Juntáronse en Bujalance y juraron seguir juntos.

Pronunciation Exercises

Vowels:

desaogaise. onomatopeĭa. xeodesĭa. aoro. kamaiada.
 küiðaðoso. alambikaðo. meteoĭo. sinalefa. wérfano. inikĭo.
 bakalao. θilíndriko. reðomaðo. ekívoko. koefiθiente.
 amaestĭaĭ. inumano. mondaðientes. gŭaiðapĭés. fragŭais.
 kambĭais. káustiko. souvezðiúxulo. kombinaĭiaĭs.

Consonants:

b, v

aŭpke vovo | volvĭó a valeise ðe su voueĭía | para vuilainos ||
 báruarĭo i vutal | peĭo valĭentĕ i kon nouleða ||
 kantavaĭ el imbáliðo | en una varak(a) ambulante ||

d, ð

dándome ðoĭa *ðoloĭez la volsa | ðoimirié tĭapĭkilo ||
 definitivamente | saldó laz ðeuðas ||
 küando lo ðixo toðo | ðisθeinimos koĭ klaiiðað la kaŭsa ||

t

los teratenĭentes | tuvĭeĭon temoĭ ||
 el terivle toĭmento ðe *tántalo ||
 date pĭsa | i tómat(e) el te ||

k, θ

de seteθientos | θĭento se iθĭeĭon θéleues ||
 theðĭeĭon | i θoθouaiom poĭ su eskasa ĭimeða ||
 pĭaĭeĭiðo efekto ðe la klemenθía theleste ||

s, z

empeθosĕ a ezvoθai la oĭposiθiðon ||
 los esteĭtoĭez ðel azmátiko ||
 se keðó suspenso | komo el azno ðe *vuiðán ||

l, r, ĭ

al roðai el rápiðo aĭmatostĕ | alvotót(s) el revaĭo ||
 rumoĭ ðe vesos | i vatĭi ðe alas ||
 el raro koloĭ | ðe akel máĭmol liro i ðuro ||

g, ĝ

tenĝo gana ðe oĭrganithai una ĝĭaĭ kavalĝata ||
 ĝanaĭás al xĭeĝo | peĭo no ĝoðarás | kon el dineĭo ke ðel
 xĭeĝo venĝa (a)ti ||
 la ĝáĭgola ĝoteava souĭ(e) el fanĝoso sĭelo ||

x

* xoakín i * xosé | exeĭθían la xuðĭkatuĭa ||
 ĭĭxĭeĭon um bĭaxe a * xaĭxa ||
 xuntáĭons(e) em * buxalanθe | i xuiĭaĭon seĝĭi xuntos ||

Some Spanish Proverbs.

SPANISH PROVERB.	ENGLISH EQUIVALENT.
A caballo regalado no hay que mirarle el diente.	Don't look a gift horse in the mouth.
A buen hambre no hay pan duro.	Hunger is the best sauce.
Anda cada oveja con su pareja.	Birds of a feather flock together.
A quien dan no escoge.	Beggars can't be choosers.
Ausencia enemiga del amor.	Out of sight, out of mind.
Do [Donde] va más hondo el río hace menor ruido.	Still waters run deep.
El lobo pierde los dientes pero no las mientes.	The leopard cannot change his spots.
En las tardanzas hay peligro.	Delays are dangerous.
Entiende primero y habla postrero.	Think twice before you speak once.
Fraile que pide por Dios pide por dos.	A friar who asks alms in God's name asks for two.
Gato escaldado del agua fría huye	A burnt child dreads the fire. <small>(Note the more effective Spanish figure.)</small>
Más valen cuatro ojos que dos.	Two heads are better than one.
No es todo oro lo que reluce.	All is not gold that glitters.
Obra común, obra de ningún.	If you want a thing done, do it yourself.
Ojos que no ven, corazón que no siente.	What the eyes cannot see, the heart does not grieve for.
Paso a paso van lejos.	Fair and softly goes many a mile.
Pelean los ladrones, descúbranse los hurtos.	When thieves fall out, honest men come into their own.
Vístemte despacio que estoy de prisa.	More haste, less speed.
Viva quien vence.	Let the best man win.

PHONETIC TRANSCRIPTION OF LESSONS I-III, IX-XI

NOTES ON THE TRANSCRIPTION:

The script used in these pages is that of the International Phonetic Association, as adapted by the author in his *Phonetic Spanish Reader*. The correspondence between individual sounds and symbols is explained in the Introductory section to this Grammar (p. xi). It remains to add a few words on the reading of connected Spanish prose.

The chief stumbling-block to foreigners who listen for the first time to spoken Spanish is the frequency of *sinalefa*, or the combination of the final vowel of one word with the initial vowel of the word following. It is difficult for the untrained foreigner to "disentangle" words so combined—still more so when he meets groups of three or four vowels in *sinalefa*: phrases like "dijo él", "lo he oído" become unintelligible. The best preventive is to train oneself to speak and read, not in words but in word-groups, and to practise *sinalefa* in one's own speech.

Accordingly vowels which lose timbre as a consequence of *sinalefa* are marked with the sign $_$ (e.g. *est $_$ es*), and the signs \parallel , $|$ have been adopted to represent long and short pauses respectively. The short pause does not generally prevent *sinalefa*, nor that assimilation of consonants which is also found in connected Spanish; the long pause, however, marks a complete stop, as the full-stop or the colon might in ordinary script.

Where the final vowel of one word is identical with the initial vowel of the word following, one of the two is nor-

mally suppressed. Thus "mi hijo" is pronounced in current conversation [mixo], "que el", [kel], &c., and the transcription shows this elision. Occasionally, where both vowels in such a group are stressed, both are often heard, in which case one has been written between brackets; in other places the bracketed vowel has been given to prevent a confusion of sense.

Word-stress has been explained in Section III (p. 3), and a knowledge of the rules there given has been assumed in marking stresses in these pages. Sentence-stress has been indicated by printing stressed vowels in heavy type (thus: esto): it must be remembered, however, that a sentence can often be stressed in various ways. Intonation has been thought too complicated and disputable a matter for an elementary reader, and it is therefore left to the teacher.

It must, of course, be remembered that the pronunciation of certain sounds in word-groups differs greatly according as the standard of speech is that of elocution, ordinary reading, or easy or rapid conversation. The standard adopted in the following selections is that of reading at a moderate pace and without undue emphasis, such as would be natural in a teacher of an elementary class. This standard, it will be noted, makes short pauses more frequent than in more rapid reading.

Lesson I

(a) el lápiθ	la pluma	uno	blaŋko
el livio	la tinta	dos	negio
el tinteɾo	la mesa	tres	roxo
el siálón	la piθara	küatio	amaɾiío
el papel	la ventana	θiŋko	

un livio || doz livios || un lápiθ || doz lápiθes || una pluma ||
dos plumas ||

¿komo se llama esto? } esto es un livio || papel ||
¿k es esto? } una piθara || tinta ||

¿küantos libros? || doz libros || ¿küantas plumas? || ties plumas ||

¿se llama esto un silón? || si sepoi || esto se llama un silón ||
 ¿se llama esto un lápiθ? || No sepoi || esto no se llama un lápiθ || estɔ ɛs una pluma ||

(b) ¿de ke koloι | es el lápiθ? || el lápiθ ez negro || ez negro ||
 ¿de ke koloι | ez la tinta? || la tinta ɛz negra || ez negra ||
 ¿de ke koloι | son loz libros? || loz libros son roxos || son roxos ||

¿de ke koloι | son las plumas? || las plumas son roxas || son roxas ||

¿ez vlapko | este papel? || si sepoi || este papel ez vlapko ||
 ¿es amaiilo | este libro? || no sepoi || este libro nɔ ɛs amaiilo || ez negro ||

el profesoi	español	* xñan
el disθípulo	fianθés	* karlos
la disθípula	inglés	* xñanita
la klase	alemán	* maía

jo soι profesoi || ustedɛ ez disθípulo || ustedɛs son disθípulos ||

¿soι jo profesoi? || sí sepoi || ustedɛ es profesoi ð español ||

¿es ustedɛ disθípulo? || si sepoi || jo soι disθípulo ||

¿son ustedɛs profesoiɛs? || no sepoi || nosotioz no somos profesoiɛs || somoz disθípulos ||

¿es xñam profesoi? || no sepoi || nɔ ɛs profesoi || ez disθípulo ||

jo soι inglés || ustedɛs son ingleses || * xñan nɔ ɛs fianθés ||
 * maía nɔ ɛs fianθesa || * xñanita ð * maía no somɔ fianθesas ||
 son inglesas ||

¿somos alemanes? || no sepoi || no somos alemanes || somos ingleses ||

Lesson II

(a) tengo mi pluma ɛn la mano || usté(ð) tiene su pluma ɛn la mano || tenemos nüestioz libros (nüestias plumas) en laz manos || ustedɛs tienen suz libros || ¿küantaz ventanas | tenemos en este küarto? || ¿küantos libros | tengo ɛn la mano ðerecɟa (iθkieiða)? || ¿souɛ la mesa? || ¿tiene ɔsté(ð) tinta roxa | * karlos? || no sepoi || no tengo tinta roxa || tengo tinta negra || ¿tienen ustedɛs akí suz libros fianθeses? || no sepoi || akí tenemos nüestioz libros españoles || el papel del profesoi || del mucɟacɟo ||

dè la señoṛa || las kasaz ðe los profesores || de las señoṛas || ¿kíen tiene mi liṽo? || jo tengo su liṽo || ¿es este su liṽo? || no señoṛ || nõ ez mi liṽo || es su liṽo ðe usted̃ || el papel del disθípulo || de *xüan || ¿k es esto? || es el papel de *xüan || nõ ez mi papel || nõ es su papel de usted̃ || ¿es est(e) el papel de *xüan? || si señoṛ | es su papel ||

(b) jo ðoṽ mi liṽo al disθípulo || a *karlos || aṛa nõ ez mi liṽo || es el liṽo ðe *karlos || es su liṽo || este liṽo es el sujo || tengo en la manõ el liṽo ðe *xüan || ¿kíen tien(e) el mío? || doj a usted̃ mi liṽo || aṛa es el de usted̃ || este kuarto es el nüestio || estoz liṽos son loz ðe usted̃es || loz liṽos alemanes son loz míos || ¿*xüan | son estoz liṽoz loz ðe *karlos? || no señoṛ || no son los sujos | son loz ðe usted̃ ||

jo avlõ espanol || usted̃ avla inglés || ¿avlamos siempṛ(e) espanol en la klase? || si señoṛ || en la klase ð espanol | peṛo nõ en la ðe fianθés || ¿avlan usted̃es fianθés en kasa? || no señoṛ | avlamos inglés || jo enseño || usted̃es eskucṣan || ¿eskucṣa usted̃ siempṛe | *xüan? || no señoṛ || jo nõ eskucṣo siempṛe | peṛo *karlos eskucṣa jaðelanta mucṣo || estuðiamoz nüestiaz lekθiones en la esküela | j en kasa || ¿k estuðia usted̃ | *karlos? || estuðio el espanol || ¿k enseño jo? || usted̃ enseña el espanol || ¿ke avlamos? || avlamos espanol || el espanol nõ ez ðifθil || es fáθil ||

¿komo se llama en espanol esta palavṛa? || ¿komo se llama esto? || ¿komo se llama usted̃? || ¿komo se llaman estoz liṽos? || son loz ðel profesor ekis || son liṽos espanoles ||

Lesson III

(a) el profesor está ðe pṛe || *xüan está sentaðo || *xüan i *karlos están sentaðos || jo estoṽ ðe pṛe || usted̃ está sentaðo || usted̃es están sentaðos || ¿dond estoṽ jo? || usted̃ está en este kuarto || ¿dond estamos? || estamos toðos en el kuarto || ¿dond está el siθón? || está ðetráz ðe la mesa || ¿dond están loz liṽos? || están soure la mesa || jo estoṽ ðelante ðe la klase || loz lápiθes están dentio ðe la kaxa ||

jo soj inglés || *karlos es fianθés || usted̃es son ingleses || somos ingleses || ¿soj jo profesor? || si señoṛ || usted̃ es profesor ð espanol || la kaxa ez ðe maðera || la ventana ez ðe viðio || mi reloṽ ez ðe oro || estoz reloṽes son de plata ||

jo soĭ vĭexo || mi pađiĕ ĭ mi mađiĕ som bĭexos || mis ixos
 i mis ixas soĭ xóvenes || usteđes soĭ xóvenes || oj estoj emfeĭmo ||
 estoj kansađo || ĵestán usteđes emfeĭmos? || no seĭoi || nosotĭoz
 nq ĕstamos emfeĭmos | peĭo * xĭanitaĭ ĕstá emfeĭma || nq ĕstá
 (a)kĭ || * xĭan es peĭeθoso || * xĭanitaĭ ĕs amaule | peĭ(o) oj está
 tĭiste | poĭk está mala ||

(b) akĭ aĭ tĭes kĭađĭos || este kĭađĭo ĕs pekeĭo || ese kĭađĭo
 ĕz ĝrante || akel kĭađĭo ĕz maz ĝrante k ese || estoz liĭvos son
 roxos || esos som beĭđes || akelĭos son aθules || esta ventanaĭ ĕstá
 (a)vĭeĭta || esaz ventanas están θerađas || este mucĭacĭo ĕs alto ||
 ese mucĭacĭo ĕz mas alto || * xĭan es el mas alto đe la klase ||
 este kĭađĭo ĕz mas eĭmoso k ese || ĵk es esto? || ĵeso? ||
 ĵakeĭo? || ĵkĭantos aĭnos tĭeneĭ usteđ? || teĭgo kĭnθĕ aĭnos ||
 * peđĭo tĭene tĭeθĕ aĭnos || usteđ ez majoi ke * peđĭo || * peđĭo ĕz
 menoĭ ke usteđ || ĵavlaĭ usteđ mucĭo? || si seĭoi || peĭo * xĭan
 avla mas || jo no soĭ ávil || jo avlo menos espaĭol k el || el
 exeĭθiθio đe * maĭía | ĕz meĭoi k el de * peđĭo ||

la nĭeθ

Lesson IX

doz niĭnos eĭkontĭaron una nĭeθ | vaxo ũn nogal | imeđĭatq
 al pĭevlo || ĵesta nĭeθ me peĭteneθe! | đixo * roveĭto | poĭke
 jo soĭ kĭen la vĭstq al pĭmeĭo || ĵno! || ez mĭa | poĭke jo ĕ siđo
 kĭen la rekoxiđo đel sĭelo | replikó * veĭnaĭđo || ĵ entĭe ambos |
 se piođuxo ũna vĭolenta đisputa ||

bamos | amigoz mĭos || jo voj a poneĭoz đĕ aĕĭeĭdo || lez
 đix(o) otĭo niĭo | đe majoi eđađ | i mas fĭerte | ke legó ĕn akel
 momento ||

se kolokó entĭe ambos | avĭó la nĭeθ | i đixo || la mitađ đe
 la káskara | peĭteneθĕ al ke vĭo pĭmeĭo la nĭeθ || la otĭa mitađ |
 al ke la rekoxiđo || eĭ kĭantq a lo đĕ ađentĭo | ĕs para mi | poĭ
 loz gastoz đel xĭiθio ||

las oĭmigas

lo ke oĭ las oĭmigas son |
 eĭan los ombĭes antaĭo ||
 de lo sujĭo | ĵ đe lq eĝstĭaĭo |
 aθĭan su piovisiđn ||
 * xĭpĭteĭ | ke tal pašĭón

notó ðe siglos atrás |
 no puðíendø agwantar mas |
 en oimigaz los tra(n)sforma ||
 ełoz muðarion de forma ||
 ¿i ðe kostumbres? || xamás ||

la gıaı kol

Lesson X

al atravesar um pñevlo | ðos ouieros | pasarion por ðelante
 ðe una werta || ; mija | k emosas kolez! | ðixø el primeio ||
 ; xamáz las e visto maz grandes! || ; ba! || respondió su amigo ||
 esas kolez no tienen naða ð egstiaoiðinaıo || un día | ðurante
 mız víaxez | vi una | k eia maz grande | ke la kasa ke se ve
 alá (a) vaxo || me parethe k egsaxerias | kontestó el primeio |
 k eia kaldeıro ðe qfiθıo || sin embargo | me aküerıðø aver
 travaxaðø | en la konstıugθıón de una kaldeıa | k eia tar
 grande komo la ıglesıa || ¿de veıaz? | respondió su amigo ||
 || ¿i ke keııan aθei kon esa enoıme kaldeıa? || deverıa servir
 para koθei la kol de ke akavaz ðe avlaıme ||

el eko

Lesson XI

el pekeıo * xoıxø | ıgnorava toðavıa lo k es un eko || un
 día | se pusø a gııtar en la praðeia | ; e! ; e! | j ojo en segıða |
 repetıase laz mızmas palavias | en el voskeθılo imeðıato ||
 krejendo ke algıen estav(a) alı eskondiðo | preguntó kon un
 aıre sorpreñdiðo | ¿kıen eres tu? || i la voθ misterıosa repitió
 imeðıatamente | ¿kıen eres tu? ||

* xoıxe replikó entonθes | ; eres un imbéθil! || i laz mızmas
 palavıaz le fueıon devueltas imeðıatamente por la mızma voθ ||
 esto l epkoleıθo | ðe tal manera k empeθo a ðııxıı ıpxuııas
 al deskonothiðo || peıxø el eko se laz ðevolvió toðas || * xoıx(e)
 entró en el voskeθılo | para vuskar | al insolentø | ; verıgaise
 ð el | peıo nø epkontıó a naðıe || korıó a kexarıse a su maðıe |
 ðıθıéndole ke um malvaðo se avıa eskondiðø en el voskeθılo |
 ; le avıa ıpxuııaðo ||

entonθez la maðıe le respondió || esta veθ eres tu el ke t
 engajas | porke nø as oıðo mas k el eko ðe tus palavias ||

VOCABULARY

The only parts of irregular verbs included in this vocabulary are their infinitives. Where irregular forms occur in the exercises they have generally been learned in the same or a preceding lesson; otherwise they can be found with very little trouble in the table of verbs (Grammar, pp. 64-9).

Regular comparatives and superlatives of adjectives and adverbs are omitted, as are also adverbs themselves, when regularly formed from adjectives. The article given with every noun should be learned together with it; thus: "la manzana", not "manzana". Where "el" is followed by (f.) it will be understood that the noun referred to is of feminine gender but is preceded by "el" because it begins with stressed "a" or "ha".

ENGLISH—SPANISH

A

a, an, un, una.
able, be, poder.
about, de (= of), cerca de (= approximately).
accent, acento, el.
account of, on, a causa de.
accustom, acostumar.
acknowledge receipt, acusar recibo.
address, n. dirección, la; señas, las; vb. hablar a.
admit, admitir.
adventure, aventura, la.
adversary, adversario, el.
advice, consejo, el.
afraid, be, temer, tener miedo.
after, después (de), después que.
afternoon, tarde, la.
again, otra vez, de nuevo.
to do a thing again, volver a hacer una cosa.
age, edad, la.
ago, hace, ha. (See Sect. XXIV, 2.)
agree, consentir.
all, todo.
allow, permitir.
almost, casi.
alms, limosna, la.
alone, solo.

already, ya, todavía.
also, también.
although, aunque.
always, siempre.
America, América, la.
American, americano.
and, y, e.
another, otro.
answer, n. contestación, la; respuesta, la; vb. contestar, responder.
any, algun(o): often omitted in translation. (See Sections V, I; XVI, 2.)
anyone, anybody, algun(o).
anything, algo.
appear, aparecer; (= seem), parecer; (of a book) salir.
applaud, dar palmadas, aplaudir.
apple, manzana, la.
apple-tree, manzano, el.
approach, llegarse, acercarse.
approve of, aprobar (trans.).
April, abril.
arm-chair, sillón, el.
army, ejército, el.
arrive, llegar.
as, como.
ask, preguntar, rogar; (= ask for) pedir.
at, a, en.

attempt, tentar.
attentive, atento.
author, autor, el.
authoritative, autoritario.
autumn, otoño, el.

B

back, be (or come), volver.
bad, mal(o).
badly, mal.
barbarian, bárbaro, el.
bare, desnudo, raso.
bark, ladrar.
battle, batalla, la.
be, (permanently) ser, (temporarily) estar. (See Section XXIX.)
beautiful, hermoso, bello.
because, por que.
become, hacerse.
bed, cama, la.
bed, go to, acostarse.
bedroom, alcoba, la; habitación, la.
beech-tree, haya (el), f.
before, antes (de), antes (de) que.
beg, mendigar. See also Appx. III.
beggar, mendigo, el.
begin, empezar, comenzar.
behind, detrás (de).
believe, creer.
belong, pertenecer.
beloved, amado.
best, el mejor.
do your best, haga Vd. lo que pueda.
better, mejor.
between, entre.
bicycle, bicicleta, la.
bind, (of books) encuadernar.
bird, pájaro, el.
bitter, amargo.
black, negro.
blackboard, pizarra, la.
blind, ciego.
blossom, florecer.
blotting-paper, papel secante, el.
blue, azul.
boil, bullir.
book, libro, el.
booking-clerk, vendedor de billetes, el.
booking-office, despacho de billetes, el; expendeduría de billetes, la.
bookshop, librería, la.

boots, riding, botas de montar, las.
born, be, nacer.
both, ambos, los dos.
bottle, botella, la.
bow, inclinarse.
box, caja, la; cajón, el.
boy, muchacho, el.
branch, rama, la.
bread, pan, el.
breakfast, desayuno, el; almuerzo, el.
breakfast, have, desayunar(se), almorzar.
bridegroom, novio, el.
bright, claro, brillante.
bring, llevar, traer.
broad, ancho.
broken, roto.
brother, hermano, el.
build, edificar, construir.
bunch, manojo, el; ramo, el.
burn, quemar.
busy, ocupado.
but, pero, mas, sino.
butter, mantequilla, la; manteca, la.
buy, comprar.
by, por, de.

C

call, llamar.
called, be, llamarse.
can, poder (physical), saber (= know how to).
captain, capitán, el.
castle, fortaleza, la; castillo, el.
catch, coger.
cathedral, catedral, la.
cave, cueva, caverna, la.
centre, centro, medio, el.
century, siglo, el.
certain, cierto.
certainly, seguramente, sin duda.
chair, silla, la.
chancel, presbiterio, el; capilla mayor, la.
change, cambiar.
chapel, capilla, la.
Charles, Carlos.
chatter, charlar.
cheap, barato.
cheque, póliza, la; cheque, el.
cherry-tree, cerezo, el.

chieftain, jefe, el.
child, niño, -a.
chocolate, chocolate, el.
choir, coro, el.
Christian, cristiano.
church, iglesia, la.
cigarette, cigarrillo, el.
city, ciudad, la.
class, clase, la.
clean, limpio.
clever, hábil.
climb, subir.
cloak, capa, la; manto, el.
clock, reloj, el.
 at seven o'clock, a las siete.
close, cerrar.
cloth, tela, la.
clothes, ropa, la.
coach, diligencia, la.
cocoa, cacao, el.
coffee, café, el.
cold, frío.
 be cold, tener frío (of persons);
 hacer frío (of the weather).
collar, cuello, el.
Colombus, Colón.
colonel, coronel, el.
comb one's hair, peinarse.
come, venir.
come out, salir.
comedy, comedia, la.
comfortable, cómodo.
command, mandar.
commend, encomendar.
companion, compañero, el.
complain, quejarse.
composed, **be**, componerse; con-
 sistir (en).
concern, concernir.
conduct, conducir.
consent, consentir (en).
conservative, conservador, el.
consider, considerar, estimar.
continually, siempre, continua-
 mente.
copy, (of a book) ejemplar, el.
corner, rincón, el; esquina, la.
correct, corregir.
cost, costar.
costly, costoso.
cottage, cabaña, la; choza, la.
 country cottage, casa de campo,
 la.
counsellor, consejero, el.
count, contar.

country, (land) país, el; (opposed
 to town) campo, el.
cousin, primo, -a.
cover, cubrir.
covered, cubierto.
criminal, reo, el.
cruel, cruel, inhumano.
curtain, cortina, la.

D

daisy, margarita, la.
dark, oscuro.
date, fecha, la.
day, día, el.
 to-day, hoy; **good-day**, buenos
 días; **every day**, todos los
 días; **some day**, algún día.
deal, a great, mucho.
deceive, engañar.
decide, decidir.
declare, afirmar, asegurar.
decoration, decoración, la.
deny, negar, rehusar.
desk, pupitre, el.
desolate, **make**, desolar, devastar.
destroy, destruir.
determined, determinado.
detest, detestar, odiar.
diamond, diamante, el.
dictionary, diccionario, el.
die, morir, morirse.
difficult, difícil.
dine, comer.
dining-room, comedor, el.
dinner, comida, la.
disappear, desaparecer.
discover, descubrir, hallar.
discuss, discutir.
discussion, discusión, la.
distance, distancia, la.
distance, **in the**, a lo lejos.
distinguish, distinguir.
disturb, molestar, perturbar.
ditch, cuneta, la; zanja, la.
do, hacer.
doctor, médico, el.
dog, perro, el.
dollar, duro, el.
Dominic, Domingo.
door, puerta, la.
doubt, dudar (de).
down, **come** or **go**, bajar.
downstairs, **come** or **go**, bajar.
drama, drama, el.

dramatist, dramaturgo, el.
draw, dibujar.
draw near, acercarse.
drawer, cajón, el.
drawing-room, salón, el.
dress, *n.* traje, vestido, el; *vb.* vestirse, ponerse la ropa.
drink, beber.

E

each, *adj.* cada; *pron.* cada uno.
early, temprano, de madrugada.
easy, fácil.
eat, comer.
educate, educar, instruir.
Edward, Eduardo.
egg, huevo, el.
eight, ocho.
elect, elegir.
eleven, once.
enemy, enemigo, el.
English, inglés.
enough, bastante.
enquire, preguntar.
enter, entrar (en).
entire, entero.
entitled, **be**, titularse.
essay, tema, el; composición, la.
European, europeo.
even, aun, también.
not even, ni siquiera; **even if**, aunque.
evening, tarde, la.
every, cada, todo.
everybody, todos.
everything, todo.
examine, examinar.
exclaim, exclamar.
execution, ejecución, la.
exercise, ejercicio, el.
expect, esperar, aguardar.
explain, explicar.
extremely, muy, extremadamente.

F

face, rostro, el; cara, la.
faithfully, **yours**. See Grammar, Appendix III.
fall, caer.
far, lejos.
father, padre, el.
fear, *n.* miedo, el; *vb.* temer.
few, poco.

few, **a**, unos, algunos.
field, campo, prado, el.
fifteen(th), quince.
fifty, cincuenta.
fifty-five, cincuenta y cinco.
finally, finalmente, en fin, por último.
find, hallar, encontrar.
fine, bueno, hermoso.
finish, acabar, terminar.
fire, fuego, el.
first, primer(o).
five, cinco.
five hundred, quinientos.
flee, huir.
floor, suelo, el; piso, el (= story).
flower, flor, la.
fluently, fluente.
follow, seguir.
foot, pié, el.
for, *prep.* para, por; *conj.* por que, pues.
forbid, prohibir.
forget, olvidar, olvidarse.
formerly, en tiempos pasados, antiguamente.
fortress, fortaleza, la.
forty-five, cuarenta y cinco.
four, cuatro.
fourteen(th), catorce.
fowl, gallo, pollo, el.
France, Francia, la.
Frederick, Federico.
freeze, helar.
French, francés.
fresh, nuevo.
friend, amigo, el.
frighten, asustar, espantar.
frock-coat, levita, la.
from, de, desde.
front of, **in**, delante de.
frontier, frontera, la.
fruit, fruta, la.
full, lleno.
furious, furioso.

G

gamekeeper, guardabosque, el.
garden, jardín, huerto, el.
gardener, jardinero, el.
gate, puerta, la; portillo, el.
general, general, el.
generally, generalmente, por lo común.

gentleman, señor, caballero, el.
 "Gentlemen" (in letters), Muy señores míos (nuestros).
 geography, geografía, la.
 German, alemán.
 get down (= alight), bajar.
 get up, levantarse.
 giant, gigante, el.
 girl, muchacha, la.
 give, dar.
 glad, alegre.
 glass, (utensil) vaso, el; copa, la; (material) vidrio, el.
 glove, guante, el.
 go, ir; (of the post, mail) salir.
 go away, irse, marcharse.
 go back, volver.
 go into, entrar (en).
 go out, salir.
 go up to, acercarse.
 God, Dios.
 gold, oro, el.
 good, buen(o).
 to be good enough to . . . , tener la bondad de . . .
 goods, géneros, los.
 granted, be taken for, suponerse.
 great, gran, grande.
 great many (or deal), a, mucho.
 green, verde.
 ground, tierra, la.
 grow (*trans.*), cultivar; (*intrans.*), crecer.
 guest, huésped, convidado, el.
 guide, n. guía, el, la.
 guilt, culpa, la.

H

habit, be in the (of), tener costumbre (de).
 half, *adj.* medio; *n.* mitad, la.
 hand, mano, la.
 handkerchief, pañuelo, el.
 happy, feliz.
 hard, *adj.* duro, difícil; *adv.* diligentemente.
 hardly, apenas.
 hat, sombrero, el.
 hate, odiar, detestar.
 have (= possess), tener; *auxiliary vb.* haber.
 to have to . . . , tener que, haber de.
 he, él.

head, cabeza, la.
 hear, oír.
 hedge, seto, el.
 height, estatura, la.
 help, ayudar.
 I cannot help weeping, No puedo menos de llorar.
 her, *adj.* su; *pron.* la, le.
 here, aquí, acá.
 high, alto.
 hill, colina, altura, la.
 him, le, lo, él.
 himself, se.
 hinder, obstruir, oponerse.
 his, *adj.* su; *pron.* el suyo.
 hold, tener, ocupar.
 holiday, día de fiesta, el.
 home, casa, la.
 at home, en casa; home (motion), a casa.
 hope, esperar.
 hospital, hospital, el.
 hospitality, hospitalidad, la.
 hot, caliente, caluroso.
 be hot, tener calor (of persons); hacer calor (of weather).
 hour, hora, la.
 house, casa, la.
 how, como; ¿cómo?
 how much, how many, cuanto; ¿cuánto?
 however, pero, empero, sin embargo.
 humorous, cómico.
 hundred, cien, ciento.
 hunger, hambre, la.
 hungry (be), tener hambre.
 hurriedly, de prisa.
 hurry oneself, darse prisa; hurry, be in a, estar de prisa, tener prisa.
 husband, marido, esposo, el.
 hyacinth, jacinto, el.

I

I, yo.
 ice, hielo, el.
 idle, holgazán, perezoso.
 if, si.
 ignorance, ignorancia, la.
 ill, malo, enfermo.
 illness, enfermedad, la.
 imagine, figurarse, imaginarse.
 immediately, al instante, inmediatamente.

important, importante.
impossible, imposible.
in, en (= within), dentro de.
in order to, para, a fin de.
indispensable, indispensable.
industrious, industrioso, laborioso, diligente.
ink, tinta, la.
ink-pot, tintero, el.
inn, posada, la.
insist upon, insistir en.
instant, actual, corriente.
the 1st inst. (in letters), el 1° del actual (del corriente).
instead of, en lugar de, en vez de.
interesting, interesante.
interpret, interpretar.
into, en.
introduce (a person), presentar.
invite, convidar, invitar.
it, él, ello, ella, lo, la.
Italy, Italia, la.

J

Jew, judío, el.
John, Juan.
journey, viaje, el.
just, justo.
to have just..., acabar de...;
it is just going to rain, va a llover, está para llover.

K

keep, guardar.
kill, matar.
kindly (to do something), tener la bondad (de + *infinitive*).
kindness, have the, tener la bondad.
king, rey, el.
kitchen, cocina, la.
know, saber (know a fact, know by heart); conocer (be acquainted with).

L

lack of, for, por falta de.
lady, señora, señorita, dama,—la.
lamp, lámpara, la.
language, idioma, el; lengua, la; lenguaje, el.
large, grande.

last, postrero, pasado.
last year, el año pasado.
late, tarde.
be late, llegar tarde.
laugh, *n.* risa, la; *vb.* reír.
laziness, pereza, la.
lazy, holgazán, perezoso.
leaf, hoja, la.
learn, aprender.
least, *adj.* el menor; *adv.* menos.
leave, dejar, partir, salir de, legar (= bequeath).
leg, pierna, la.
lemon, limón, el.
lend, prestar.
less, *adj.* menor; *adv.* menos.
lesson, lección, la.
letter, carta, la.
letter-box, buzón, el.
Liberal, liberal, el.
library, biblioteca, la.
lie (= tell lies), mentir.
life, vida, la.
like, *adv.*, *prep.* como.
like, querer (a), amar; gustar (*impers.*).
lip, labio, el.
listen, escuchar.
little, pequeño, poco.
live, vivir.
lofty, alto, altísimo.
London, Londres.
long, largo.
a long time, mucho tiempo.
long as, as, mientras (que).
look, mirar; parecer (= seem).
look for, buscar.
lose, perder.
Louis, Luis.
love, querer (a), amar.
lover, novio, el.
luggage, equipaje, el.
lunch, almuerzo, el.
lunch, have, almorzar.

M

mackintosh, impermeable, el.
mad, loco.
magazine, periódico, el.
magician, mágico, el.
magnificent, magnífico.
majesty, Majestad, la.
make, hacer.
man, hombre, el.

manner, manera, la; modo, el.
in this manner, de este modo, así.
many, a great many, mucho.
map, mapa, el.
March, marzo.
marry, casarse (con).
Mary, María.
mass, misa, la.
high mass, misa mayor.
master, maestro, profesor, el.
match, fósforo, el.
matter, no, no importa.
May, *n.* Mayo.
may, *vb.* poder.
mayor, alcalde, el.
me, me; mí.
mean, significar, querer decir.
meet, encontrar.
mend, remendar.
messenger, mensajero, el.
midnight, medianoche, la.
might. See **may**.
mile, milla, la.
milk, leche, la.
mine, mío, el mío.
Minister, Prime, Presidente del Consejo, el; primer ministro, el.
misfortune, desgracia, la.
molest, molestar.
moment, momento, el.
Monday, lunes.
money, dinero, el.
monk, monje, el.
month, mes, el.
mood, genio, humor, el.
more, más.
the more . . . the more, cuanto más, tanto más.
morning, mañana, la.
in the morning, por la mañana.
morrow, to-, mañana.
the day after to-morrow, pasado mañana.
most, el más, lo más.
mother, madre, la.
mountain, montaña, la.
Mr., Señor, el Señor.
much, very much, mucho, muchísimo.
how much, cuánto.
muddy, lodoso, barroso.
must, tener que, haber de.
my, mi.
myself, yo mismo.

N

name, nombre, el; (title) título, el; (surname) apellido, el.
What is the name of . . . ?
 ¿Cómo se llama . . . ?
native, natural, el, la.
near, cerca de.
necessary, necesario, preciso.
nephew, sobrino, el.
never, nunca, jamás.
new, nuevo.
nice, bueno, bonito, lindo, gentil.
night, noche, la.
to-night, esta noche; **at night**, por la noche; **last night**, anoche.
nightfall, anochecer, el.
nine, nueve.
nineteen (th), diez y nueve.
ninth, nono, noveno.
no, no; ninguno (= not only).
noble, noble, majestuoso.
nobody, nadie.
noise, ruido, el.
none, ninguno, nadie, nada.
nor, ni.
not, no.
is there not? ¿no es verdad?
note-book, cuaderno, el; libreta, la.
nothing, nada.
notice, *n.* aviso, el; muestra, la; *vb.* observar.
novel, novela, la.
now, ahora.

O

O that . . . ! ¡ojalá!
obey, obedecer.
occupy, ocupar, tomar.
October, octubre.
of, de.
officer, oficial, el.
often, muchas veces.
old, viejo, grande.
old man, viejo, el.
older, mayor.
on, en, sobre.
once, una vez.
one, un, uno.
only, solo, solamente, no. . . más que.
open, opened, abierto.
open, *v.trans.* abrir; *v.intrans.* abrirse.

opera-glasses, gemelos, los.
 opinion, opinión, la.
 or, o, u.
 orange, naranja, la.
 order, mandar.
 order that, in, para que.
 order to, in, para, a fin de.
 ought. See owe.
 our, nuestro.
 ours, el nuestro.
 out, fuera.
 overcoat, sobretodo, el; abrigo, el.
 owe, deber.
 own, propio, mismo.

P

page, página, la.
 palace, palacio, el.
 paper, papel, el.
 = newspaper, periódico, el.
 paragraph, párrafo, el.
 parcel, paquete, el.
 Parisian, parisiense.
 Parliament, (Spanish) Cortes, las;
 (British) Parlamento, el.
 past, pasado.
 at half-past six, a las seis y
 media.
 Paul, Pablo.
 pay, *n.* sueldo, el.
 pay, *vb.* pagar.
 peach, melocotón, el.
 pear, pera, la.
 peel, *vb.* mondar, pelar.
 pen, pluma, la.
 pencil, lápiz, el.
 people, gente, la.
 perhaps, tal vez, quizá(s).
 persecute, perseguir.
 persuade, persuadir.
 Peter, Pedro.
 phrase, frase, la.
 piano, piano, el.
 pick, coger, recoger.
 picture, cuadro, el.
 pity, lástima, la.
 place, poner.
 plant, plantar.
 plate, plato, el.
 play, (an instrument) tocar; (a
 game) jugar.
 playground, patio (de recreo), el.
 pleasant, agradable.
 please, *vb. impers.* gustar, placer.

I am very pleased to see you,
 Me alegro mucho de verle;
 please, if you please, Sírvase
 Vd. (with infinitive). Gracias.
 pleasure, gusto, el.
 I have pleasure in . . . , Tengo el
 gusto de . . .
 plenty of, mucho.
 poem, poema, el.
 poet, poeta, el.
 poetry, poesía, la.
 poor, pobre.
 popular, popular.
 porter, (of a station) mozo, el; (of
 a house) portero, el.
 porter's lodge, portería, la.
 position, posición, la.
 possible, posible.
 post (mail), correo, el.
 by return of post, a vuelta de
 correo.
 post (a letter), send to the post,
 echar (al correo).
 postcard, (tarjeta) postal, la.
 postman, cartero, el.
 postpone, diferir, aplazar.
 poverty, pobreza, la.
 power, autoridad, la; poderío, el.
 preach, predicar.
 precious, precioso.
 prefer, preferir.
 present, regalo, el.
 president, presidente, el.
 pretty, lindo, bonito.
 priest, sacerdote, el.
 princess, princesa, la.
 prisoner, prisionero, el.
 probably, probablemente.
 professor, profesor, el.
 promise, prometer.
 prove, probar.
 provide, proveer.
 pulpit, púlpito, el.
 pupil, discípulo, -a; niño, -a.
 put, poner.
 put on, ponerse, vestir.

Q

quality, calidad, la.
 quarter, cuarto, el.
 at a quarter past one, a la una
 y cuarto.
 question, pregunta, la (query);
 asunto, el (affair).

quite, muy, enteramente, completamente.

R

rabbit, conejo, el.
railing, barandilla, la.
railway, rail, ferrocarril, el.
rain, llover.
rain in torrents, llover chuzos; llover a torrentes.
rations (military), raciones, las.
reach, llegar a.
read, leer.
ready, pronto, listo.
really, verdaderamente, realmente.
recapture, volver a tomar, res-presar.
receive, recibir.
recognize, reconocer.
red, rojo, encarnado.
refuse, negarse.
regiment, regimiento, el.
register (luggage), facturar.
regularly, con regularidad.
relate, referir, contar.
remain, quedar, quedarse.
remedy, remedio, el.
there is no remedy, no hay (más) remedio.
remember, recordar, acordarse (de).
remit, remitir.
repeat, repetir.
repent, arrepentirse.
replace, reemplazar.
reply, *n.* contestación, la; res-puesta, la; *vb.* contestar, res-ponder.
resist, resistir.
rest, descansar.
restaurant, restaurán, el.
return, volver, regresar.
in return, por, en cambio.
review, *n.* revista, la; *vb.* pasar re-vista.
revolution, revolución, la.
ride (a bicycle), andar en bicicleta.
right, derecho.
to have the right, tener derecho;
to be right, tener razón; **on the right**, a la derecha.
ripe, maduro.
ripen, get ripe, madurar.
rise, alzarse, levantarse.

river, río, el.
road, camino, el; **vía**, la.
room, cuarto, el.
room for, be, caber. See Grammar, p. 64, note 1.
rose, rosa, la.
ruined, arruinado.
ruler, regla, la.
run, correr.

S

sad, triste.
safe, seguro.
saint, san, santo.
salt, sal, la.
salute, saludar.
same, mismo.
sample, muestra, la.
sandwich, sandwich, el.
satisfaction, satisfacción, la.
Saturday, sábado, el.
say, decir.
school, escuela, la.
schoolboy, muchacho (de escuela), el.
seal, sellar.
seat, asiento, el.
second, segundo.
see, ver.
seem, parecer.
seize, coger, asir, tomar.
seldom, raramente.
self, mismo.
sell, vender.
send, enviar.
sentry, centinela, la.
September, se(p)tiembre.
serious, serio, grave.
servant, criado, el.
serve, servir.
set, poner, ponerse.
set the table, poner la mesa;
the sun sets, el sol se pone.
set out, ponerse en camino, partir.
seven, siete.
seventh, séptimo, siete.
seventy-five, setenta y cinco.
several, algunos, varios, diversos.
Seville, Sevilla.
she, ella.
sheet, sábana, la; hoja, la; pliego (de papel), el.
shoe, zapato, el.
shoot (a person), fusilar.

shop, tienda, la.
show, mostrar.
sign, indicio, signo, el; señal, la.
silent, **be**, callar.
sincerely, **yours**. See Grammar, Appendix III.
sing, cantar.
sir, señor.
 dear sir, muy señor mío.
sister, hermana, la.
sit down, sentarse.
 sitting down, sentado.
six, seis.
sixteen, diez y seis.
sixty-five, sesenta y cinco.
sleep, dormir.
sleep, **go to**, dormirse.
sleepy, **be**, tener sueño.
slipper, zapatilla, la.
slow, lento.
slowly, despacio.
small, pequeño.
smile, *n.* sonrisa, la; *vb.* sonreír.
smoke, humo, el.
snow, nieve, la.
so, tan; así; lo.
so that, para que.
soap, jabón, el.
soldier, soldado, el.
some, unos, algunos (often omitted).
 somebody, alguien; **something**, algo.
son, hijo, el.
song, canción, la.
soon as, **as**, luego que, tan pronto como.
sorry, **be**, sentir.
Spain, España, la.
Spaniard, Español, -a.
Spanish, español.
spare one's life, alargar la vida.
speak, hablar.
spectacle, espectáculo, el.
spectacles, anteojos, los.
speech, discurso, el; oración, la.
spend, gastar, ocupar, emplear, pasar.
spire, aguja, espira, la.
spring, primavera, la.
square, plaza, la.
stage-coach, diligencia, la.
staircase, escalera, la.
stamp, sello, el.
stand up, alzarse, levantarse.
standing, de pie, derecho.

start, partir, salir (set out), empezar (begin).
station, railway, estación (del ferrocarril), la.
stay, quedarse.
steal, robar, hurtar.
still, siempre, todavía, aun.
story, cuento, el.
strange, extraño, raro.
street, calle, la.
 principal street, la calle mayor
strict, severo.
strike, golpear, herir.
 it is striking seven, están dando las siete.
study, *n.* gabinete, el; *vb.* estudiar.
subject, sujeto, el.
succeed, suceder (a).
such (a), tal.
sugar, azúcar, el.
suit, traje, el.
summer, verano, el.
summon, convocar.
sun, sol, el.
Sunday, domingo, el.
sunny, **it is**, hace (hay) sol.
sunrise, salida del sol, la.
sunshade, parasol, el; sombrilla, la.
supper, cena, la.
sure, seguro.
surprise, sorprender.
surprised, sorprendido.
suspicion, sospecha, la.
sweet, dulce.

T

table, mesa, la.
tailor, sastre, el.
take, tomar, llevar, traer, coger.
take off, quitar.
talk, hablar.
tall, alto.
tea, té, el.
teach, enseñar.
tear up, rasgar.
telegram, telegrama, el.
tell, decir.
ten, diez.
tent, tienda, la.
than, que, de.
thank you, gracias.
that, *conj.* que; *rel. pr.* que; *dem. adj.* ese, aquel; *dem. pr.* ése, aquél.

the, el, la, los, las.
theatre, teatro, el.
their, su.
them, los, les, las, ellos, ellas.
then, entonces, luego, después, pues.
there, allí, allá.
there is, are, hay.
they, ellos, ellas.
thing, cosa, la.
think, pensar, creer.
third, tercer(o).
thirteen(th), trece.
thirty, treinta.
thirty-one, treinta y uno.
this, *dem. adj.* este; *dem. pron.* éste.
thoroughly, enteramente, a fondo.
though, aunque.
three, tres.
three hundred, trescientos.
through, por.
ticket, billete, el.
third-class ticket, billete de tercera; **single ticket**, billete sencillo; **return ticket**, billete de ida y vuelta; **admission ticket**, entrada, la.
tie, corbata, la.
time, tiempo, el (period of time); vez, la (repetition); hora, la (time of day); época, la (epoch).
at that time, en aquel tiempo;
what time is it? ¿qué hora es?
tired, cansado.
tiresome, cansado.
to, a.
 Before an infinitive, often rendered by other prepositions or omitted. See Section XLIV, 1.
to read to oneself, leer para sí.
to-day, hoy.
together, juntamente, juntos
too, aun, también.
too much, demasiado.
top (of a hill), cima, la.
touch, tocar.
towards, hacia.
towel, toalla, la.
town, ciudad, la; población, la.
train, tren, el.
traitor, traidor, el.
translate, traducir.
translation, traducción, la.
transport, transportar.

travel, viajar, marchar (of a vehicle).
tree, árbol, el.
tremble, temblar.
trenches, trincheras, las.
troops, tropas, las.
try, probar, tratar.
turn, *v. intr.* volverse.
twelfth, duodécimo, doce.
twelve, doce.
twenty, veinte.
twenty-first, veinte y uno.
twenty-one, veinte y uno.
twenty-seven, veinte y siete.
twice, dos veces.
two, dos.

U

ugly, feo.
umbrella, paraguas, el.
uncle, tío, el.
unconscious, insensible, desmayado.
under, bajo, debajo (de).
understand, comprender, entender.
United States, Estados Unidos, los.
unless, a menos que.
until, hasta (que).
upstairs, arriba.
go upstairs, subir.
us, nos, nosotros.
use, make use of, servirse de.
useful, útil.

V

valliant, valiente.
vegetables, legumbres, las.
very, *adj.* mismo; *adv.* muy.
very much, mucho.
vicar, párroco, el.
village, pueblo, el; aldea, la.
violin, violín, el.
visit, visitar.
volume, tomo, el.

W

waistcoat, chaleco, el.
wait for, esperar (a).
waiter, mozo, el.
waiting-room, sala de descanso (de espera), la.

wake, *v.trans.* despertar; *intrans.* despertarse.
walk, andar, marchar, ir a pié.
walk, take a, dar un paseo.
wall, pared, la.
want, querer, desear, necesitar.
war, guerra, la.
wardrobe, armario, el.
warlike, guerrero, m rcial.
warm, caliente, caluroso.
be warm, hacer calor (of weather), tener calor (of persons).
wash, *v.trans.* lavar; *intrans.* lavarse.
watch, reloj, el.
water, agua, el (*f.*).
way, camino, el; manera, la; modo, el.
we, nosotros.
weak, débil, impotente.
weakness, debilidad, la.
wear, llevar, traer.
wedding, boda, la.
week, semana, la; ocho días, (los).
well, *adv.* bien.
what, *interrog.* ¿qué? ¿cómo? *rel.* lo que.
whatever, cualquier cosa que.
when, cuando; luego que; ¿cuándo?
whenever, cuando, cuandoquiera que.
where, donde; ¿dónde?
wherever, dondequiera que.
whether, si.
which, que, el cual, el que, lo cual, ¿cuál?
while, mientras (que).
white, blanco.
who, que, quien, ¿quién?, el cual, el que.
whom, que, ¿quién?
whose, cuyo, ¿de quién?
why, ¿por qué?

wide, ancho.

300 feet wide, trescientos piés de ancho.

wife, esposa, mujer, la.

William, Guillermo.

win, ganar.

wind, viento, el.

it is windy, hace viento.

window, ventana, la.

window-ledge, mesilla (de la ventana), la.

wine, vino, el.

winter, invierno, el.

wish, querer, desear.

with, con.

without, sin, sin que.

woman, mujer, la.

wonder, preguntarse.

wont, be, soler.

wood, bosque, el.

word, palabra, la.

work, *n.* trabajo, el; obra, la; *vb.* trabajar.

workman, obrero, el.

worry, inquietarse.

worth, be, valer.

It is not worth the trouble, No vale la pena.

would that! ¡ojalá!

write, escribir.

writing-desk, escritorio, el.

Y

year, año, el.

yes, sí.

yesterday, ayer.

yet, aun, todavía.

you, *nom.* Usted, -es (Vd. -s); tú, vosotros; *acc.* le, les, te, os.

young, joven.

your, su, tu, vuestro.

yours, el suyo, el tuyo, el vuestro.

yourself, Vd. mismo.

SPANISH—ENGLISH

[A few words which are identical in both languages are not included in this vocabulary.]

A

- a, to.
abajo, down, below.
abandonar, abandon.
abierto, open, opened.
abigarrado, variegated.
abnegación, la, abnegation.
abrazar, embrace.
abrir, open.
abstinencia, la, abstinence.
abuelo, el, grandfather.
abundante, abundant.
acá, here.
acabar, finish.
acabar de . . ., to have just.
acaecer, happen.
acaso, perhaps.
acceder, accede.
acción, la, action.
aceptar, accept.
acercarse, approach, draw near.
acompañar, accompany.
aconsejar, counsel, advise.
acordarse, remember.
acudir, come up, come together, run together; fulfil (engagement, &c.).
acusación, la, accusation.
achacoso, ill, ailing.
adelantarse, make progress.
adentro, inside, within.
adivinar, guess.
admirarse (de), be astonished (at).
admitir, admit.
adquisividad, la, sharpness, astuteness.
afán, el, anxiety, care.
afligir, afflict.
agarrar, seize, grasp.
agosto, August.
agrado, el, affability.
agua, el (f.), water.
aguantar, suffer, bear.
aguardar, expect, wait for.
ahogar, choke, suffocate.
ahogarse, drown.
ahora, now.
ahorrar, save.
airado, vehement, passionate, irate.
aire, el, air.
- al**, to the.
alabanza, la, praise.
alarde (de), hacer, boast of, show off.
alcance, el, sum, balance (of money).
alcanzar, reach, attain, obtain, succeed.
alcornoque, el, cork-tree.
aldea, el (f.), village.
aldeana, la, village woman.
alegrarse, be glad, get merry.
alemán, German.
aletear, el, flutter.
algo, something.
alguien, someone.
algún(o), adj. some, any, a few;
pron. someone.
alicuoto, aliquot.
aliento, el, breath.
alimentarse, feed.
alimento, el, food.
alma, el (f.), soul, mind.
almorzar, breakfast, lunch.
almuerzo, el, breakfast, lunch.
alto, high.
allá, allí, there.
de allí en poco tiempo, in a short time from then.
allá abajo, over there.
amable, amiable, nice.
amado, loved, beloved.
amar, love.
amarillo, yellow.
ambición, la, ambition.
ambicioso, ambitious.
ambos, both.
amenaza, la, threat.
amenazar, threaten.
amigablemente, amicably.
amigo, el, friend.
amigo de leer, fond of reading.
amistad, la, friendship.
amo, el, master.
amor, el, love, affection, sign of love.
análogo, similar, in conformity (with).
andas, las, litter.

anhelo, el, eagerness.
anillo, el, ring.
animal, el, animal.
ánimo, el, mind, courage.
ansia, el (*f.*), affliction, anxiety.
ansiar, desire eagerly.
antaoño, of old.
antes (de), antes (de) que, before
 (of time).
antiguo, antique, ancient.
antojo, el, whim.
añadir, add.
año, el, year; de buen año, fat,
 well-fed, well-liking.
apalea, beat, flog.
aparecer, appear.
apartar, divide, separate.
apenas, hardly.
apetito, el, appetite.
aplaudir, applaud.
aplicar, apply, put.
aposento, el, room, abode.
aprender, learn.
aprensión, la, apprehension.
apresurado, hasty.
apresurarse, make haste.
apresar, imprison.
apropiar, appropriate, assume.
apuesto, elegant, genteel.
apuro, el, want, affliction.
aquel, that (yonder).
aquí, here.
arador, el, ploughman.
arar, plough.
árbol, el, tree.
ardoroso, burning.
Argentina, Argentine.
arma, el (*f.*), arms.
armada, la, fleet, navy.
armas, las, arms.
arquebuz, la, arquebus, gun.
arrancar, drag, tear.
arrayán, el, myrtle.
arreglo a tarifa, con, in accord-
 ance with the price agreed upon.
arribar, land.
arrojar, fling, throw.
arruinar, ruin.
asaltar, assail.
asar, roast.
ascenso, el, promotion.
asegurar, assure, make safe.
así, so, thus.
así que, so that, and also.
asilo, el, hospital.

asistir, be present, assist.
asno, el, ass, fool.
asomar, show, appear.
asombro, el, astonishment.
aspecto, el, aspect.
áspero, rough.
aspiración, la, aspiration.
astrólogo, el, astrologer.
astucia, la, astuteness.
asustado, terrified.
atender, attend, pay attention(s).
atisbar, scrutinize, pry, keep watch
 upon.
Atlántico, el, Atlantic.
atmósfera, la, atmosphere.
atónito, amazed, dumbfounded.
atormentar, torment.
atrapar, catch, overtake.
atrás, backwards, in time past.
atravesar, cross.
atrofiar, atrophy.
atronar, stun.
atroz, cruel, fearful, atrocious.
aun, even, still, yet.
aunque, although.
autómata, el, automaton, machine.
autoridad, la, authority.
auxilio, el, help.
avisar, notify, give notice to.
ayer, yesterday.
ayudar, aid, help.
azabache, el, jet.
azorar, terrify.
azul, blue.

B

bajar, descend, go downstairs.
bajo, under, beneath, low.
ballesta, la, cross-bow.
bandido, el, bandit.
banquete, el, banquet.
bañarse, bathe, have a bath.
barba, la, beard.
barco, el, ship, boat.
basca, la, strong dislike, nausea.
bastante, enough.
batalla, la, battle.
bautizar, baptize.
beber, drink.
becerrillo, el, young calf.
belleza, la, beauty.
Bernardo, Bernard.
berro, el, watercress.
besar, kiss.

Biblia, la, Bible.
bíblico, biblical.
bicicleta, en, on (one's) bicycle.
bicho, el, ridiculous person.
el bicho fatal, the poor (silly) fool.
bien, adv. well; *noun masc.* wealth.
bizco, squint-eyed.
blanco, white.
boca, la, mouth.
bocado, el, mouthful, bite.
boda, la, wedding.
bolsillo, el, pocket.
bonanza, la, fair weather (at sea); prosperity, fortune.
bonito, pretty.
bosque, el, wood.
bosquecillo, el, diminutive of bosque.
brazo, el, arm.
breña, la, crag.
breve, short.
bribón, el, rascal, scamp.
brisa marina, la, sea-breeze.
brújula, la, compass.
buen(o), good.
buque, el, ship, boat.
buque a vapor, steamboat.
burlarse (de), make fun of.
busca de, en, in search of.
buscar, look for.

C

caballero, el, knight, horseman, gentleman.
caballo, el, horse.
cabeza, la, head.
cabo, al, finally; in short.
cada, cada uno, each.
cadáver, el, corpse, dead body.
cadena, la, chain.
caer, fall.
café, el, coffee.
caja, la, box, drum.
cálculo, el, calculation.
caldera, la, pot, cauldron.
calderero, el, brazier, coppersmith.
calma, la, calm.
calmar(se), (grow) calm.
calor, el, heat.
callar, be silent, quiet.
camarada, el, comrade.
cambio, en, instead, in return.
caminante, el, traveller.

caminar, travel, journey.
camino, el, path, way, road.
campaña, la, country, campaign.
campo, el, country, field.
cansado, tired, tiresome.
cansancio, el, weariness.
cantar, sing.
cántico, el, song.
cantidad, la, quantity.
caño, el, jet, mouth (of fountain).
capaz, capable.
capilla, la, chapel.
capital, la, capital.
cara, la, face.
cara de pascua, smiling, cheerful face.
caracol, el, snail.
carátula, la, mask, ugly face.
cárcel, la, prison.
carga, la, burden, load.
cargar, load.
cargo, el, burden, load.
carriño, el, affection.
Carlos, Charles.
carnero, el, sheep.
carnicería, la, carnage.
carrera, la, career.
carta, la, letter.
casa, la, house.
en casa, at home.
casarse (con), marry.
cáscara, la, peel, shell.
casita, la, diminutive of casa.
caso, el, case.
castellano, el, Spanish, Castilian.
casualidad, la, chance.
católico, Catholic.
caudal, el, property.
causa, la, cause.
a causa de, on account of.
cautela, la, caution, prudence.
cavilación, la, capricious notion, obsession.
cazar, hunt, go hunting.
celaje, el, tone or colour of the sky.
cena, la, supper.
cencerro, el, bell (round the neck of an animal).
ensor, el, critic, censor.
cerca de, near.
cercano, near.
ceremonia, la, ceremony.
cerrado, shut, closed.
cerrar, shut, close.

cerril, wild, rough.
certificado, el, certificate.
ciego, blind.
cielo, el, sky, heaven.
cierto, certain, a certain.
cinco, five.
las cinco, five o'clock.
circunstancia, la, circumstance.
ciudad, la, city.
claro, clear, bright.
clase, la, class.
clavar, nail, fasten.
clave, la, key.
clemencia, la, mercy, clemency.
cobarde, el, coward.
cocer, cook.
coco, el, bogey man.
cojer, catch, take, get.
col, la, cabbage.
cola, la, tail.
colocarse, place oneself.
Colón, Columbus.
coloquio, el, conversation.
color, el, colour.
comarca, la, region, territory.
combatir, combat, attack, contradict.
comedia, la, comedy, play.
comedor, el, dining-room.
comenzar, begin.
comer, eat, dine, feed.
comercio, el, business, commerce.
comida, la, meal, dinner.
comisario, el, collector.
como, like, as.
¿cómo? how, what.
compañero, el, companion.
compás, el, compass.
comprar, buy.
comprender, understand.
compresión, la, restraint, compression.
con, with.
cóncavo, concave.
conceder, grant.
concentrar, concentrate.
conciencia, la, conscience.
concluir, conclude.
concurrencia, la, concurrence, attendance.
conde, el, count.
condición, la, condition, rank, capacity.
conductor, el, conductor, leader.
conferencia, la, conference.

conferenciar, confer, hold conference.
confesar, confess.
confianza, la, confidence.
confuso, confused.
conmigo, with me.
conmover, disturb, agitate.
conocer, know.
conseguir, get, attain.
consigo, with him, her, you.
constancia, la, constancy.
constituir, constitute.
construcción, la, building, construction.
consuelo, el, consolation, joy, satisfaction.
consultar, consult.
contado, de, instantly, in hand.
contar, count.
contestar, answer.
contigo, with you (*sing.*).
continuo, continual.
contra, against.
contraer, contract.
contrario, contrary.
contraste, el, contrast.
convencer, convince.
convertir, convert.
convidar, invite.
copiar, copy.
copla, la, couplet.
corazón, el, heart.
corcova, la, hump.
cordero, el, lamb.
corral, el, yard.
correr, run.
corte, la, court.
corteza, la, bark.
cortina, la, curtain.
corveta, la, curvet.
cosa, la, thing.
costa, la, coast.
costar, cost.
costumbre, la, custom, habit.
coto, poner, stop, delay.
crecer, grow.
creer, think, believe.
se cree, it is believed.
crystal, el, glass.
crisiano, Christian.
cruz, la, cross.
cuadrilla, la, gang, crew.
cuadro, el, picture.
cual, which, what.
¿cuál? which? what?

cuando, when.
cuanto, how much, how many.
en cuanto a, as for.
¿cuánto? how much? how many?
¿a cuántos estamos? what day is it?
cuarentón, el, man of forty.
cuarto, el, room, quarter, fourth.
cuatro, four.
cubrir, cover.
cuchara, la, spoon.
cuchillo, el, knife.
cuello, el, neck, collar.
cuenta, dar, give an account (of).
cuentecito, el, dim. of **cuento**.
cuento, el, tale, story.
cuerpo, el, body.
cuestas, a, on the shoulders, on the back.
cuidado, el, care.
cuidar, take care of.
culpable, guilty.
cura, el, parson, vicar.
curtido, tanned; inured to hardships.
cuyo, whose.

CH

chaquetón, el, large jacket.
chismoso, gossiping.
chispa, la, spark.

D

dar, give.
darse por, consider oneself.
de, of, from.
más de, more than.
decaer, decline, decay.
decir, say, tell.
se dice, it is said.
dedicar, dedicate, devote.
dedo, el, finger.
defender, defend.
dejar, let, leave, allow.
del, of the.
delante de (por), in front of.
delicioso, delicious.
demás, lo(s), the rest.
demasía, la, excess.
demora, la, delay.
dengue, el, modesty, coyness, prudery.
dentro (de), inside, within.

depositar, deposit, place.
derecho, right.
desagradar, displease.
desatino, el, folly, senselessness.
desayunar(se), have breakfast.
desayuno, el, breakfast.
descalzo, barefooted.
descansar, rest.
descanso, el, rest.
descarnar, strip off the flesh.
desconocido (el), unknown (person), stranger.
describir, describe.
descubrimiento, el, discovery.
desde, from, since.
desdichado, unfortunate, unhappy.
desear, desire, wish.
desechar, reject.
desembarcar, disembark.
desempeñar, fulfil, practise.
desenterrar, dig up, disinter.
deseo, el, desire.
deseoso, desirous.
desesperarse, despair.
designar, intend.
desnudarse, undress.
desnudo, stripped, undressed, bare.
desocupado, retired, without occupation.
espacio, gently, slowly.
despavorido, terrified.
despertar, waken.
despertarse, awake.
desposorio, el, contract.
desprenderse, get rid.
desprendimiento, el, disinterestedness.
después (de), after (of time).
despuntar, el, (day)break.
Destino, el, Destiny, Fate.
destronar, defeat, destroy.
desvanecer, remove, cause to vanish.
detener, stop, detain.
detrás (de), behind.
devolver, return.
día, el, day.
buenos días, good day, good morning.
diario, daily.
diciembre (el), December.
dicha, la, happiness, good fortune.
dicho, above-mentioned.
diez, ten.
diez y siete, seventeen.

diferente, different.
 difícil, difficult, hard.
 dificultar, impede, make difficult.
 dificultoso, difficult, arduous; ugly.
 dilación, *la*, delay.
 diligente, diligent.
 dinero, *el*, money.
 Dios, God.
 dirigir, direct.
 discípulo, *-a*, pupil.
 discreto, discreet, prudent.
 disculpa, *la*, excuse, apology.
 discurrir, contrive, infer.
 discurso, *el*, speech.
 disimular, hide.
 disparar, discharge, fire.
 disputa, *la*, dispute.
 distancia, *la*, distance.
 divertirse, amuse, enjoy oneself.
 divulgar, distinguish, descry.
 doce, twelve.
 documento, *el*, document.
 dolor, *el*, pain, sorrow.
 dominante, dominant.
 domingo, *el*, Sunday.
 dominguero, Sunday (*adj.*).
 dominicano, Dominican (*friar*).
 donación, *la*, gift, donation.
 donde, where.
 ¿dónde? where?
 ¿por dónde? which way?
 dos, two.
 dragón, *el*, dragon.
 ducho, expert, skilled.
 duda, *la*, doubt.
 dudar (*de*), doubt.
 dueño, *el*, master, owner.
 dulce, sweet.
 durante, during.
 duro, *el*, dollar.
 duro, hard, severe.

E

e, and.
 eco, *el*, echo.
 echar, throw, cast, place, impose.
 edad, *la*, age.
 Eduardo, Edward.
 efecto, *en*, indeed.
 ejemplo, *el*, example.
 ejercer, exercise.
 ejercicio, *el*, exercise.
 el, the.
 él, he, him.
 el que, he who.

elegía, *la*, elegy.
 elocuencia, *la*, eloquence.
 ella, she.
 ellos, *ellas*, they.
 embarcar, embark.
 embargo, *sin*, indeed, however,
 notwithstanding.
 embarrancar, run aground.
 embestir, attack, assail.
 emigración, *la*, emigration.
 emigrar, emigrate.
 empeñarse, make up one's mind,
 give security.
 empezar, begin.
 empleo, *el*, employment, occupa-
 tion.
 en, in, on.
 encantador, enchanting.
 encarcelar, put in prison.
 encargar, commission, order.
 encargarse, make it one's busi-
 ness.
 encender, kindle.
 encolerizar, make angry.
 encontrar, meet, find.
 encumbramiento, *el*, elevation,
 height.
 enemigo, *el*, enemy.
 energía, *la*, energy.
 enfermo, ill.
 enfurecer, get angry.
 engañarse, be deceived.
 engolfar, sink, disappear.
 engullir(*se*), swallow.
 enojo, *el*, annoyance.
 enorme, huge, enormous.
 enseñar, teach, show.
 entender, understand.
 enterrar, bury.
 entonar, intone.
 entonces, then, afterwards.
 por aquel entonces, at that time.
 entrada, *la*, entrance.
 entrar (*en*), enter.
 entre, between.
 entrecano, greyish.
 enviar, send.
 envidiar, envy.
 equivocarse, make a mistake.
 escapar, escape.
 escarcha, *la*, frost, hoar-frost.
 escasez, *la*, scantiness.
 escaso, small, scanty.
 escena, *la*, scene.
 esclavitud, *la*, slavery.

esclavo, el, slave.
escollo, el, reef, shoal, breaker.
esconder, hide, conceal.
escondrijo, el, hiding-place.
escribir, write.
escuchar, listen.
escuela, la, school.
ese, adj. that; *pron.* that, that one.
esencial, essential.
esmeralda, la, emerald.
espada, la, sword.
espantajo, el, scarecrow.
espanto, el, consternation.
espantoso, terrible.
España, la, Spain.
español, Spanish.
espejo, el, glass, mirror.
esperanza, la, hope.
esperar, wait for, hope.
espíritu, el, spirit.
esplendor, el, splendour.
estacada, la, battle-field, scene of a fight.
estación, la, season.
estado, el, state.
estanque, el, pond.
estar, be.
¡está bien! that's right!
este, adj. this.
éste, pron. this, this one.
estilo, el, style, custom.
estorbar, hinder, encumber.
estrago, el, damage, ruin.
estruendo, el, clamour.
estudiar, study.
estupendo, stupendous.
exagerar, exaggerate.
excelencia, la, excellency.
exceso, el, excess.
exclamación, la, exclamation.
exclamar, exclaim.
exequias, las, obsequies.
éxito, el, success.
experimentar, experience.
expiatorio, expiatory.
explicar, explain.
expreso, express.
exquisito, exquisite, fine, consummate.
extraer, extract.
extranjero, el, foreigner, stranger.
extrañar, wonder, admire.
extraño, strange, foreign.
lo extraño, other people's property.

extraordinario, extraordinary.
extremaunción, la, Extreme Unc-tion.

F

fabricar, make, manufacture.
fácil, easy.
facilitar, facilitate.
faltar, fail, be wanting, be lacking.
familia, la, family.
fantástico, fantastic.
fatal, fatal, unfortunate.
fatiga, la, fatigue, weariness.
fatigar, tire, harass.
favor, el, favour.
fé, la, faith.
fealdad, la, ugliness.
febrero (el), February.
Felipe, Philip.
fenómeno, el, phenomenon.
feo, ugly.
feón. See Grammar, on Suffixes.
feria, la, holiday.
Fernando, Ferdinand.
feróstico (= feo), ugly.
fiar, trust.
fiera, la, wild beast.
fiero, wild, savage.
fiesta, la, feast, festival.
fin, el, end.
en fin, por fin, finally.
fincar, hold property (finca), establish oneself.
 fingir, feign, pretend, dissemble.
fisco, el, exchequer.
físico, physical.
fiaco, feeble, lean, thin.
flor, la, flower.
flotar, float.
forcejear, struggle.
forjar, fashion, invent.
forma, la, form.
formar, form.
fortuna, la, fortune.
forzar, force.
francés, French.
frase, la, phrase.
freno, el, bridle.
fresco, fresh.
frío, cold.
frondoso, leafy.
fruta, la, fruit.
fruto, el, fruit, result.
fuelle, la, fountain.

fuera, out, outside.
 fuerte, strong.
 fuerza, la, force, strength.
 fulgente, brilliant.
 furioso, furious.

G

gala, la, wedding-dress, trousseau.
 galán, gallant.
 ganar, gain.
 garra, la, claw.
 gasto, el, expense, cost.
 gente, la, people.
 gentil, nice.
 geta, la, ugly face.
 glotón, el, glutton.
 glotonamente, gluttonously.
 Gobernador, governor.
 gozar, enjoy.
 gracia, la, grace.
 gracias, thanks, thank you.
 gran, grande, large, big, great, tall.
 grave, grave, slow, serious.
 gravedad, la, gravity.
 graznido, el, croak.
 grillos, los, fetters, irons, pinions.
 gritar, cry.
 grito, el, cry.
 guardacantón, el, curbstone.
 guerra, la, war.
 guía, el, la, guide.
 gustar, (used impersonally with dative) like, be pleased, taste.
 gusto, el, taste, liking, pleasure.

H

haber, have (auxiliary).
 haber de, have to; hay, there is, there are; había, hubo, there was, etc.; hay lodo, it is muddy.
 hábil, clever.
 habitante, el, inhabitant.
 hablar, speak, talk.
 hacer, make, do.
 hacer agua, leak; hacer calor, frío, be hot, cold.
 hacia, towards.
 hado, el, Fate.
 halagar, flatter, cajole, coax.
 hallar, find.
 hallazgo, el, discovery.

hambre, el, (la), hunger.
 tener hambre, be hungry.
 hambriento, hungry.
 armonía, la, harmony.
 hasta, up to, until.
 hasta luego, good-bye for the present; hasta mañana, good-bye till to-morrow.
 hazaña, la, exploit, deed.
 herir, strike, wound.
 hermana, la, sister.
 hermano, el, brother.
 hermoso, beautiful.
 héroe, el, hero.
 herrada, la, pail, bucket.
 hetele, lo and behold (French *voilà*).
 hidalgo, el, nobleman, man of gentle birth.
 hielo, el, frost, ice.
 higa, la, amulet, charm.
 hija, la, daughter.
 hijo, el, son.
 hoja, la, leaf.
 holocausto, el, sacrifice.
 hombre, el, man.
 ¡hombre! heavens! dear me!
 honesto, honest.
 hora, la, hour, time.
 horizonte, el, horizon.
 hormiga, la, ant.
 hoy, to-day.
 huella, la, track, trace, footstep.
 huerta, la, garden, orchard.
 hueso, el, bone.
 huir, flee.
 humano, human.
 humildad, la, humility.

I

idear, contrive, plot.
 iglesia, la, church.
 ignorar, not to know, be ignorant of.
 ilusión, la, illusion.
 imaginación, la, imagination.
 imbécil, el, fool, imbecile.
 impaciencia, la, impatience.
 implorar, implore.
 importante, important.
 impregnar, fill, impregnate.
 imprevisto, unforeseen.
 inclinación, la, inclination.
 inclinar, incline, bend.

indefenso, defenceless.
indiano, Indian.
indicar, show.
indicio, el, index, sign.
indigencia, la, poverty, need.
indio, Indian.
indulto, el, pardon, remission of punishment.
infallible, infallible.
infante, -a, infant; prince, princess.
infeliz, unhappy.
ínfimo, lowest.
informarse, make enquiries.
infundir, inspire with.
ingenio, el, genius.
ingenioso, clever, ingenious.
inglés, English.
injuria, la, insult.
injuriar, insult.
inmediato, close, near, immediate.
inmensidad, la, immensity.
inquieto, restless, turbulent.
insignia, la, badge, sign.
insolencia, la, insolence.
insolente, insolent.
instante, el, instant.
al instante, instantly.
inteligible, intelligible.
intención, la, intention.
interceder, intercede.
interiormente, inwardly.
interpretar, interpret.
intérprete, el, interpreter.
interrumpir, interrupt.
intimación, la, intimation.
inverosímil, unlikely.
invierno, el, winter.
invocar, invoke.
ir, go.
irse, go away.
irradiar, irradiate.
isla, la, island.
izquierdo, left.

J

jamás, never.
japonés, Japanese.
jarro, el, jug.
jilguero, el, goldfinch.
jinete, el, horseman.
Jorge, George.
joven, young, young man.
Juan, John.

Juanita, Jane, Jenny.
juicio, el, judgment.
juntar, unite, join.
junto, close to, near.
juntos, together.
justificar, justify.
justo, just.
juventud, la, youth.
juzgar, judge.

L

la, her, the, it (*fem. sing.*).
laboriosidad, la, industry.
ladrón, el, thief.
lanza, la, lance.
lápiz, el, pencil.
Laponia, la, Lapland.
largo, long.
las, the, them (*fem. pl.*).
lavar, wash.
le, him, to him, you, to you (*sing.*).
lección, la, lesson.
leer, read.
lejano, distant, far, remote.
lejos (de), far (from).
lentamente, slowly.
león, el, lion.
les, them, to them, you, to you (*pl.*).
lesión, la, hurt, injury.
levantar, raise.
levantarse, get up.
ley, la, law.
libertad, la, liberty.
librar, free, set free.
libre, free.
libro, el, book.
ligero, light.
límite, el, limit.
lindo, pretty.
literato, el, literary man, learned man.
literatura, la, literature.
lo, the, it, him.
lobo, el, wolf.
lograr, get, obtain, attain.
lomo, el, back, shoulder.
Londres, London.
longitud, la, longitude.
los, the, them (*masc. pl.*).
lucio, bright, shining.
luego, then, soon.
desde luego, certainly.
luego que, as soon as.

lugar, *el*, place, village.
 luna, *la*, moon.
 luz, *la*, light.

LL

llamar, call.
 llamarse, be called.
 llegar, arrive.
 lleno, full.
 llevar, take, wear, endure, carry,
 incline.
 llorar, weep, bewail.
 llover, rain.
 lluvia, *la*, rain.

M

machucho, mature, judicious.
 madera, *la*, wood.
 madre, *la*, mother.
 maíz, *el*, maize.
 majestad, *la*, majesty.
 majestuoso, majestic.
 maleza, *la*, thicket.
 malgastador, spendthrift.
 mal(o), bad, ill.
 malvado, wicked.
 mamón, *el*, suckling.
 mandar, send, command.
 manera, *la*, manner.
 maniático, maniacal.
 manicomio, *el*, asylum.
 mano, *la*, hand.
 mantener, keep, maintain.
 mañana, *la*, morning, to-morrow.
 por la mañana, in the morning.
 máquina, *la*, machine.
 mar, *el*, sea.
 marchar, walk, go.
 marcharse, go away, go off.
 marchito, faded.
 María, Mary.
 marido, *el*, husband.
 marino, *el*, seaman, mariner.
 mas, but.
 más, more.
 matar, kill.
 matrimonio, *el*, matrimony.
 máxime, principally.
 mayor, greater, older.
 me, me, to me.
 mediante, by means of.
 medio (*el*), half, mean, expedient.
 mediodía, *el*, midday.

medra(s), *la(s)*, progress.
 medroso, fearful, timorous.
 melancólico, melancholy.
 melodía, *la*, melody.
 menear, move, wag.
 menester, *es*, it is necessary.
 menguar, decrease.
 menor, less, smaller (*adjective*).
 menos, less (*adverb*).
 merced, *la*, honour, thanks.
 merecer, earn, deserve, win (*in*
 marriage).
 mes, *el*, month.
 mesa, *la*, table.
 mesurado, at a moderate pace.
 meter, place, put, smuggle.
 mezquino, wretched.
 mi, my.
 miedo, *el*, fear.
 mientras, while.
 mil, thousand.
 mimoso, delicate, gentle.
 minorarse, grow less.
 mio (*el*), mine.
 mira, *la*, aim.
 mirar, look, look at.
 misa mayor, *la*, High Mass.
 mismo, same, very.
 misterio, *el*, mystery.
 misterioso, mysterious.
 mitad, *la*, half.
 modo, *el*, manner.
 molestar, worry, inconvenience,
 disturb.
 momento, *el*, moment.
 monarca, *el*, monarch.
 monástico, monastic.
 monstruoso, monstrous.
 montaña, *la*, mountain.
 moral, *la*, moral.
 moreno, brown, dark-complexioned.
 morir, die.
 mortal, mortal.
 mosquete, *el*, musket, gun.
 mostrar, show, pretend.
 motivo, *el*, motive, subject.
 moverse, move.
 movimiento, *el*, motion.
 moza, *la*, girl, maid.
 mozo (*adj.*), young; (*noun*), boy,
 porter.
 muchacha, *la*, girl.
 muchacho, *el*, boy.
 muchísimo, very much indeed.
 mucho, much, very much, very.

mudanza, la, change.
mudar, change.
mudo, silent, mute.
muelle, el, quay.
muerte, la, death.
muerto, dead.
muestra, la, sign.
mujer, la, woman.
mulo, el, mule.
mundo, el, world.
todo el mundo, everybody.
muralla, la, wall.
murallón, el, great wall, rampart.
murmullo, el, murmur, murmuring.
murmuración, la, murmuring.
muy, very.

N

nacer, be born.
nada, nothing.
nadie, nobody.
nariz, la, nose, nostril.
natural (*adj.*), natural; (*noun*), native.
nave, la, ship, vessel.
navegante, el, navigator.
navegar, navigate.
necesario, necessary.
necesidad, la, necessity.
necesitar, need.
negocio, el, business.
negro, black.
negruzco, blackish, swarthy.
ni, neither, not even.
nido, el, nest.
nieve, la, snow.
ninguno, no, none, nobody.
niño, niña, child.
no, no, not.
noche, la, night.
la media noche, midnight.
nogal, el, walnut-tree.
nombre, el, name.
nos, us, to us.
nosotros, we.
notar, notice, note.
novela, la, novel, story.
nudo, el, knot.
nuestro (el), our, ours.
nuevo, new, fresh.
nuez, la, nut, walnut.
nunca, never.
nupcial, nuptial.

O

obediencia, la, obedience.
objeto, el, object.
obligación, la, obligation.
obligar, oblige, force.
obrero, el, workman.
observar, observe, notice.
obstáculo, el, obstacle.
obtener, obtain.
océano, el, ocean.
ocioso, idle, leisured, unoccupied.
octubre, el, October.
ocultar, hide.
oculto, hidden.
ocupación, la, occupation.
odio, el, hate.
oeste, el, west.
ofender, offend, hurt, harm.
ofenderse, be offended.
oficio, el, office, trade.
ofrecer, offer.
oído, el, ear, hearing.
oír, hear.
ojo, el, eye.
ola, la, wave.
oleada, la, wave, billow.
oleaje, el, sea, waves.
oler, smell.
olvidar, forget.
onceja, la, diminutive of **onza**.
 (A gold coin formerly current in Spain.)
oponer, oppose.
oprimir, oppress.
opulente, opulent, rich.
ordenar, arrange.
oreja, la, ear.
orgullo, el, pride.
orla, la, border.
oro, el, gold.
oruga, la, caterpillar.
osado, bold, daring.
osar, dare.
oso, el, bear.
otro, other, another.

P

Pablo, Paul.
paciencia, la, patience.
pacífico, peaceful.
padecer, suffer.
padre, el, father.
los padres, parents.

- pagar, pay.
 página, la, page.
 país, el, country.
 pájaro, el, bird.
 palabra, la, word.
 palabrita, la, dim. of palabra.
 palacete, el, little palace.
 palacio, el, palace.
 paleta de lavar, la, washing-board.
 palique, el, trifling conversation.
 palo, el, stick, blow.
 pan, el, bread.
 panza, la, paunch, belly.
 pañuelo, el, handkerchief.
 Papa, el, Pope.
 papel, el, paper.
 papel secante, blotting-paper.
 par de, a, even to.
 para, for, to, in order to.
 paraguas, el, umbrella.
 paraje, el, place.
 pararse, stop.
 parecer, seem, appear.
 al parecer, apparently.
 párrafo, el, paragraph.
 párroco, el, parson, parish priest, vicar.
 parte, la, part.
 es parte a . . . , it contributes to . . .
 partido, el, party; district; decision.
 pasado, past, last.
 el año pasado, last year.
 pasaje, el, fare.
 pasajero, el, passenger.
 pasaporte, el, passport.
 pasar, pass, happen.
 pasear, walk.
 pasearse, take a walk.
 paseo, el, walk, (manner of) life.
 pasión, la, passion.
 pasmado, astonished.
 paso, el, step.
 patio, el, yard, courtyard.
 patria, la, native land.
 paz, la, peace.
 pecho, el, breast.
 pedir, ask for, ask.
 Pedro, Peter.
 pelambarrera, la, head of hair.
 pelar, skin, pluck, strip.
 peligro, el, danger.
 pena, la, pain, trouble.
 pensar, think.
 pensión, la, pension, award of money.
 Peña, la, rock, cliff.
 peor, worse.
 pequeño, small, little.
 perder, lose.
 perdón, el, pardon.
 perdonar, pardon.
 perecer, perish.
 perezoso, lazy, idle.
 perfecto, perfect.
 periódico, el, newspaper.
 permitir, permit.
 pero, but.
 perro, el, dog.
 perseguir, persecute.
 persona, la, person.
 pertenecer, belong, pertain.
 peruano, Peruvian.
 pescuezo, el, neck.
 peso, el, weight.
 pez, el, fish.
 piadoso, merciful, piteous.
 pié, el, foot.
 de pié, standing; a pié, on foot.
 pierna, la, leg.
 piloto, el, pilot.
 pillar, steal.
 pisar, tread.
 pizarra, la, blackboard, slate.
 plácido, placid.
 planta, la, plant.
 plata, la, silver.
 plato, el, plate, dish, course.
 plaza, la, place, market-place, square.
 pluma, la, pen.
 poblado, peopled.
 poblado, el, city, town, village.
 poco, little, few.
 poder, el, power.
 poder, *vb.* be able.
 poderoso, powerful, influential.
 poesía, la, poetry.
 pollino, el, ass.
 ponderar, weigh, consider, examine.
 poner, put, place.
 ponerse, set (of sun), place oneself; ponerse a, to begin to; ponerse los vestidos, put on one's clothes; poner de acuerdo, make (two persons) agree.

por, by, for, through.
por . . . que (with *subjunctive*), however; **porque**, because, so that; **¿por qué?** why?
portero, el, porter, carrier.
posar, lodge, set down.
poseer, possess.
posesión, la, possession.
posible, possible.
postal (tarjeta postal), la, post-card.
posterior, later.
postrar, prostrate, lay low.
postre, el, dessert, last course (of meal).
pradera, la, meadow.
prado, el, meadow.
precipitar(se), hurry.
precisión, la, necessity.
preciso, necessary.
predicar, preach.
pregunta, la, question, request.
premio, el, reward, price.
presentar(se), present (oneself).
presentimiento, el, presentiment.
preso, el, prisoner, captive.
prestar, lend.
pretender, claim, try.
previsor, foreseeing, prescient.
primer(o), first.
príncipe, el, prince, ruler.
principiar, begin.
principio, el, beginning.
prisionero, el, prisoner.
probablemente, probably.
probidad, la, probity, honesty.
producirse, be produced, take place.
producto, el, product.
profesar, profess.
profesión, la, profession.
profesor, el, master, professor.
profetizar, prophesy.
prohibir, forbid, prohibit.
promesa, la, promise.
prometer, promise.
pronto, prompt(ly), quick(ly), soon.
por lo pronto, for the time being.
pronunciar, pronounce.
propicio, propitious.
propiedad, sin, incorrectly, improperly.
propio, suited (to), own, proper.
proponer, resolve.
proporcionar, procure.

propósito, a, on purpose.
próspero, prosperous.
prosternarse, humble oneself.
proteger, protect.
provechoso, profitable.
proveer, provide.
Providencia, la, Providence.
provisión, la, provision.
proyectar, project.
prudente, prudent.
público, el, public.
pueblo, el, town, village.
puerta, la, door.
puerto, el, port.
pues, then, since.
pues bien, well then.
puesto, el, post, employment.
pujante, powerful, robust.
pulmonía doble, la, double pneumonia.
punto, el, point, matter, question.
al punto, at that moment.

Q

que, that, than, which.
más que, more than.
¿qué? what?
quedar, remain.
quedarse, remain, stay.
quejarse, complain.
querer, want, wish.
querer a, love; **querer decir**, mean.
querido, querida, dear, loved (one).
queso, el, cheese.
quien, who (rel.).
¿quién? who (*interrog.*)?
quince, fifteen.
quinientos, five hundred.
quintas, libre de, exempt from military service.
quinto, fifth.
quizá(s), perhaps.

R

rabia, la, rage, anger.
rama, la, branch.
rana, la, frog.
rapaz, adj. crafty, rapacious; **noun**, boy.
rápido, rapid.
rasgar, tear.

rato, *el*, short time.
 ratón, *el*, mouse.
 ratoncillo, *el*, diminutive of ratón.
 ratonera, *la*, mouse-trap, mouse-hole.
 rayar, rule, streak.
 raza, *la*, race.
 razón, *la*, reason.
 real, royal.
 real, *el*, real (Spanish coin).
 recado, *el*, message.
 recelo, *el*, fear, suspicion, mistrust.
 receta, *la*, recipe, prescription.
 recibir, receive.
 recio, stout, strong.
 reclamar, claim, demand.
 recobrar, recover, pick up.
 recodo, *el*, corner, angle.
 recoger, pick up.
 recordar, remember.
 red, *la*, net, network.
 redondilla, *la*, rondel, redondilla.
 redondo, round.
 reflexionar, reflect, meditate.
 regalar, present, make a present of.
 regalo, *el*, gift, present.
 regato, *el*, streamlet, bed of a stream.
 región, *la*, region.
 regir, rule.
 registrar, examine.
 regularidad, *la*, regularity.
 reina, *la*, queen.
 reino, *el*, kingdom.
 reir (se) (de), laugh (at).
 religioso, religious.
 reloj, *el*, watch.
 relleno, full, replete.
 remedio, *el*, remedy.
 remoto, remote, distant.
 remover, remove.
 rendir, render.
 reparar, notice, consider; repair.
 reparo, *el*, repair.
 repente, *de*, suddenly.
 repentino, sudden.
 repetir, repeat.
 replicar, reply.
 reposado, quiet.
 reprender, rebuke, reproach.
 reprimir, repress, keep back.
 reptil, *el*, reptile.
 república, *la*, republic.
 requerimiento, *el*, intimation.
 respetuosamente, respectfully.

responder, reply.
 respuesta, *la*, reply.
 resucitar, awaken, revive.
 retirarse, retire.
 retiro, *el*, retirement, retreat.
 retrato, *el*, likeness, portrait.
 revestir, clothe.
 revista, *la*, review, journal.
 rey, *el*, king.
 rico, rich.
 riesgo, *el*, risk.
 rigor, *el*, rigour, hardship.
 risa, *la*, laughter.
 risco, *el*, crag, cliff.
 risueño, smiling, pleasant.
 robado, *el*, victim of a robbery.
 Roberto, Robert.
 robusto, robust.
 rodear, surround.
 rodillas, caer de, fall on one's knees.
 roer, gnaw.
 rojo, red.
 romo, snub (nosed).
 romper, break.
 ropa, *la*, dress, clothes.
 rostro, *el*, face.
 roto, broken.
 rubio, ruddy.
 rugir, roar, bellow.
 ruido, *el*, noise.
 rumbo, *el*, direction, bearing, route.

S

saber, to know.
 sacar, draw out, take out, strike.
 sacerdote, *el*, priest.
 sagaz, sagacious, astute.
 sal, *la*, salt.
 salida, *la*, exit, departure.
 salir, go out, leave, get out.
 le salieron amigos, he found friends.
 salto, *el*, frisk, jump, leap.
 salud, *la*, health.
 salvo, a *su*, at will.
 san, saint.
 sanción penal, *la*, heavy penalty.
 sano, healthy.
 santiguar, sign (with the cross).
 santo, *m.* saint.
 el día del santo, saint's day, name-day.
 saña, *la*, wrath, passion.

sarao, el, ball, dance.
 satisfacer, satisfy.
 sazón, la, season.
 se, him, her, it, them, oneself.
 seguida, en, then, afterwards.
 seguir, follow.
 según, according to, according as.
 segundo, second.
 seguridad, la, security.
 seguro, safe, sure, certain.
 seis, six.
 selva, la, wood.
 semana, la, week.
 semblante, el, appearance, face, countenance.
 sencillo, simple.
 senderear, trudge, climb.
 sendero, el, path, footway.
 sentado, sitting, seated.
 sentar, seat.
 sentarse, sit down.
 sentido, el, sense.
 sentimiento, el, feeling.
 sentir, feel, regret.
 señal, la, signal, sign.
 señalar, point out, mark, nominate.
 señor, señora, sir, madam.
 separar, separate.
 ser, *vb.* be.
 el Ser Supremo, Supreme Being.
 serenar(se), grow clear, clear up, settle.
 sereno, calm, serene.
 servicio, el, service.
 servilleta, la, serviette.
 servir, serve, be of use.
 sírvase *Vd.* (*with infinitive*), please.
 sí, yes; himself.
 siempre, always.
 siete, seven.
 siglo, el, century.
 significar, mean.
 siguiente, following.
 sillón, el, arm-chair.
 sin, without.
 sino, but.
 sinónimo, el, synonym.
 sirena, la, siren.
 sitio, el, place, position.
 soberbio, proud.
 sobre, on, besides.
 sobrenatural, supernatural.
 sobretodo, el, overcoat.
 socio, el, partner.

sol, el, sun.
 solemne, solemn.
 solemnizar, solemnize.
 soler, be wont to.
 solicitud, la, solicitude.
 solitario, solitary, lonely.
 sólo, only, alone.
 soltar, untie, loosen.
 soltero, -a, bachelor, spinster.
 solterón. See Grammar, on Suffixes.
 sollozar, sigh.
 sonar, sound.
 soneto, el, sonnet.
 sonrisa, la, smile.
 soñar, dream.
 sorba, la, sip, draught.
 sordo, dull, heavy.
 sorprender, surprise.
 sospechar, suspect.
 sostener, hold, sustain.
 su, his, her, its, your, their.
 suave, gentle, soft.
 subir, rise, mount.
 súbitamente, suddenly.
 súbito, sudden.
 sublevarse, rise in rebellion.
 suceder, happen.
 suceso, el, event, result, success.
 sueldo, el, pay, stipend.
 suelo, el, floor, ground.
 sueño, el, sleep.
 tener sueño, to be sleepy.
 suerte, la, luck, fortune; lot; manner, way.
 sujeto, subject.
 suma, la, the sum (of), the greatest.
 suntuoso, sumptuous.
 superstición, la, superstition.
 supersticioso, superstitious.
 suspiro, el, sigh.
 suyo, el, his, hers, its.

T

tabardillo pintado, el, spotted fever.
 tajada, la, slice, steak.
 tajar, cut, chop, slice.
 tal, such, so.
 tal vez, perhaps.
 talismán, el, talisman.
 también, also.
 tan, so, as.
 tan . . . como, as . . . as.

tanto, so much, so many.

tanto . . . como, as many . . . as.

tardanza, la, lateness, delay.

tardar, delay.

tarde, late.

tarde, la, afternoon, evening.

por la tarde, in the evening.

tarifa, la. See **arreglo**.

taza, la, cup.

té, el, tea.

tea, la, torch, brand.

teatro, el, theatre, stage.

temblar, tremble.

temer, fear.

tempestad, la, tempest, storm.

temprano, early.

tenedor, el, fork.

tener, have.

tener que, to have to; **¿qué tiene Vd.?** what's the matter?

tener quince años, to be fifteen years old.

tercer(o), third.

terco, obstinate.

término, el, end.

terruño, el, country.

tesoro, el, treasure.

tez, la, complexion.

tiempo, el, time, weather.

tierra, la, ground, earth.

tinta, la, ink.

tintero, el, ink-pot.

tío, el, uncle.

tirano, tyrannical.

tirar, throw, throw away.

tocar, touch, play.

tocino, el, bacon, lard.

todavía, still, yet.

todo, all.

tomar, take.

Tomás, Thomas.

tonante, thundering.

tono, el, tone.

topinera, la, mole-hole.

topo, el, mole.

torrentes, llover a, to rain in torrents.

tortuga, la, tortoise.

trabajar, work.

trabajo, el, work.

traducir, translate.

traer, bring, carry, wear.

tragar, swallow.

tranquilizar, quiet, set at rest.

transformar, transform.

trasladarse, be transported.

trastorno, el, disorder, confusion.

tratar, treat, have to do with.

travesía, la, voyage, passage.

trece, thirteen.

trepar, climb, clamber.

tres, three.

tripulantes, los, crew.

triste, sad.

tristeza, la, sadness.

trocar, change.

trompeta, la, trumpet.

tropa, la, troop.

tropezar, stumble.

tropiezo, el, obstacle, slip.

tu, your (*familiar*), thy.

tú, you (*familiar*), thou.

turbar, disturb, confuse.

turbarse, be disturbed, confused.

U

u, or.

ufano, arrogant.

último, last.

un, uno, a, one.

único, only, sole.

unir, unite.

usar, use.

Usted, -es, you.

V

valedor, el, patron.

Valentín, Valentine.

valer, be worth.

valerse, avail oneself.

valido, el, favourite.

valor, el, valour; brave man.

¡Vamos! Come!

vano, en, in vain.

vario, various, different.

Vd. See **Usted**.

vecino, el, neighbour.

veinticuatro, twenty-four.

veintidos, twenty-two.

vela, la, sail.

hacerse a la vela, set sail.

veneno, el, poison.

vengarse (de), be revenged (on).

venir, come.

ventana, la, window.

ventura, la, chance, hazard.

ver, see.

verse, see oneself, be seen.

verano, el, summer.

veras, de, indeed.

verdad, la, truth.

es verdad, it is true; ¿de verdad? really? ¿no es verdad? isn't it so? (French: *n'est-ce pas?*)

verde, green.

vestidos, los, clothes.

vestirse, dress (oneself).

vez, la, time.

una vez, once; tal vez, perhaps; otra vez, again.

viaje, el, journey, travel.

vicio, el, vice.

vicioso, vicious.

víctima, la, victim.

vida, la, life.

vidrio, el, glass.

viejo, old.

viento, el, wind.

vientre, el, stomach.

vigoroso, vigorous.

vil, vile, wretched.

vino, el, wine.

violento, violent.

visión, la, vision.

visita, la, visit.

visitar, visit.

víspera, la, vesper, evening.

vista, la, sight.

vivir, live.

vivo, living.

voluntad, la, willingness.

volver, return.

volver a hacer una cosa, to do something again.

voraz, voracious.

vosotros, you (plural of tú).

voto, el, vow.

voz, la, voice, rumour.

vuelta, la, return.

vuestro (el), your, yours (plural of tu).

Y

y, and.

ya, already, yet.

yerba, la, herb, grass.

yesero, el, chalk dealer.

yeso, el, chalk.

yo, I.

Z

zorra, la, fox, vixen.

zorregar disciplinazo, chastize.

BLACKIE'S

SPANISH SERIES

A new series of Spanish Texts, competently edited, and neatly produced, and at moderate prices. In cloth covers, limp.

- La Gitanilla.** By MIGUEL DE CERVANTES. From the *Novelas Ejemplares*. Abridged and edited, with Notes and Vocabulary, by E. ALLISON PEERS, M.A., Gilmour Professor of Spanish in the University of Liverpool. 1s. 6d. net.
- La Batalla de Roncesvalles,** and other Romances. Abridged and edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by E. ALLISON PEERS, M.A. 1s. 6d. net.
- La Verdad Sospechosa.** By JUAN RUIZ DE ALARCÓN. Edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by J. R. ELDER, M.A., D.Litt. 1s. 6d. net.
- La Vida de Francisco Pizarro.** By M. J. QUINTANA. Abridged and edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by E. ALLISON PEERS, M.A. 1s. 6d. net.
- El Sí de las Niñas.** By LEANDRO FERNÁNDEZ DE MORATÍN. Comedy in Three Acts. Edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by E. ALEC WOOLF, B.A., D.Litt. 1s. 6d. net.
- La Vida es Sueño.** By P. CALDERÓN DE LA BARCA. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by H. J. CHAYTOR, M.A., Fellow and Dean of St. Catharine's College, Cambridge. 1s. 9d. net.
- La Vida de Lazarillo de Tormes.** Abridged and edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by E. ALLISON PEERS, M.A. 1s. 6d. net.

BLACKIE & SON, LTD., 50 OLD BAILEY, LONDON, E.C. 4
GLASGOW, BOMBAY, AND TORONTO

14 DAY USE
RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED
LOAN DEPT.

This book is due on the last date stamped below, or
on the date to which renewed.
Renewed books are subject to immediate recall.

7 Dec '58

REC'D LD
NOV 23 1958

17 Dec 59 GM

REC'D LD
JAN 19 1960

21 JUL '60 AE
REC'D LD
JUL 27 1960

LD 21A-50m-9,'58
(6889s10)476B

General Library
University of California
Berkeley

0-124

U.C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES

00913



C003336262

874904

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

